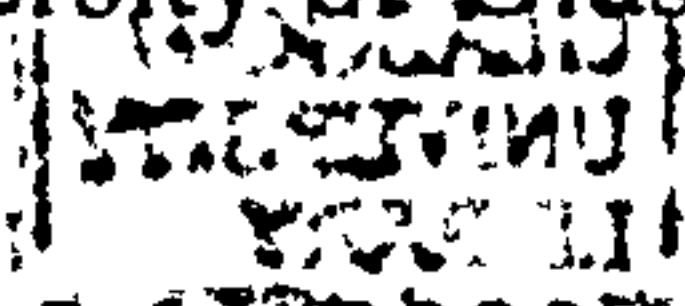


**CLASSICAL MUSIC IN NARRATIVE FILM:
STRATEGIES FOR USE AND ANALYSIS**

by Dean William Duncan

A Dissertation Presented to the Department of Theatre, Film and
Television in the Faculty of Arts
at the University of Glasgow

Submitted in Fulfillment of the Requirements for the Degree of
Doctor of Philosophy

University of Glasgow

July, 2000

Copyright © 2000 Dean William Duncan

All Rights Reserved

**CLASSICAL MUSIC IN NARRATIVE FILM:
STRATEGIES FOR USE AND ANALYSIS**

TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
Abstract	1
Chapter 1 INTERDISCIPLINE AND THE PLACE OF CLASSICAL MUSIC IN FILM STUDIES	3
Introduction	3
Mapping the Field	11
Finding a Place for Source Music in Film	21
A Note on Boundaries and Limitations	27
Chapter 2 FILM MUSIC AND THE MUSICAL COMMUNITY	29
Romanticism and Modernism as Relating to Hollywood Film Music	33
The Grove Dictionaries	38
Film Music Criticism: Underlying Sentiments	49
Chapter 3 SOUND MONTAGE AND COUNTERPOINT ANALOGIES	61
The Two Avant Gardes	63
Parallelism	67
Montage and the Counterpoint Analogy	72
Formal Counterpoint	76
Confusion: Sound Montage and the Concept of Counterpoint	80
Overtonal Montage	83

	Musical Meaning and Contrapuntal Montage.....	86
Chapter 4	NARRATION, PROGRAMME AND NARRATIVE.....	95
	Adapting Programme to the Present.....	97
	Programme Music and the Function of the Literary Text.....	99
	Programme and Film Music: Formal and Ideological Parallels.....	104
	Programme, Film Music, and Multi-Valent Meaning.....	111
	Programme Everywhere.....	116
	Progressive Programme: Music and Education.....	125
Chapter 5	INTERPRETING CLASSICAL MUSIC IN FILM.....	135
	Interpretive Strategies: Intentionality.....	140
	After Intention: Pragmatism, Obscurity, Inadequacy.....	149
	Interpretive Strategies: Phenomenology.....	158
	Indeterminacy.....	175
Chapter 6	SUMMARY, CONCLUSIONS AND IMPLICATIONS.....	181
	Justification for Film Music, and for Film-Musical Quotation.....	181
	Multivalent Montage.....	189
	The Figurative Implications of <i>Musical</i> Counterpoint.....	194
	20 th Century Programme.....	198
	BIBLIOGRAPHY.....	203

ABSTRACT

The present study deals with the use of classical music in narrative film, and some of the theoretical and historical considerations that can help us contextualize and understand that use. The following is a list of chapters, and a summary of concepts contained therein.

CHAPTER ONE: After briefly considering some of the challenges of interdisciplinary scholarship, I will review the literature on classical music in the sound film. This review will touch upon the early (1930s and 1940s) commentaries of Kurt London, Hanns Eisler and Theodor Adorno, and John Huntley, and then pass on to a kind of consensus held between both commentators and composers of the 1960s and 1970s. Finally I will review the work of more recent film music scholars who, along with some others working in other fields, provide what I feel to be a more open model for understanding this kind of film music.

CHAPTER TWO: Having reviewed the position of the film music community, this chapter will concern some responses of *music* critics to film music generally, and the appropriation of classical music in particular. I will outline specific complaints and criticisms, and attempt to show some of the broader socio-musical issues that motivated them.

CHAPTER THREE: This chapter will consider the musical parallelism associated with traditional Hollywood-type narratives, and then concentrate on the oppositional model (derived from "montage" aesthetics) represented by Soviet and other modernist cinemas. I will deal especially with the influential "counterpoint analogy," and consider how

musical discourse can resolve some of the confusions that this analogy has habitually presented.

CHAPTER FOUR: The last chapter will have presented a counterpoint based on musical principles as a possible analogy or metaphor for how film music works, and how its meaning and affect can be understood. This chapter is about the programme music tradition that prevailed in the nineteenth century. I will enumerate some of its similarities, musically and in terms of its critical reception by the music community, to film music. I will explore how programmes, or extra-musical narratives, are also central to understanding musical meaning, and to the use of classical music in films.

CHAPTER FIVE: Here I will look more closely at montage, meaning, and classical music on film. A number of questions will be addressed. What are the interpretive strategies that most apply? How does musical meaning function in a film context, especially with regard to source music? Beyond classical music in general, what is the importance of periods, idioms, composers and specific pieces? What is the significance of the artist's intent? What about when the artist is not fully in control of his circumstances, or of his craft? What of phenomenology? All of these expansions obviously complicate the equation. Accordingly the concept of indeterminacy will be reviewed to suggest how both chance and control operate within musical montage.

CHAPTER SIX: I will suggest and expand upon some of the extra-musical implications of this study. I will suggest some of the possibilities these raise for future research.

CHAPTER ONE: INTERDISCIPLINE AND THE PLACE OF CLASSICAL MUSIC IN FILM STUDIES

Introduction

As viewed from without, the disciplines of music can appear to be very resistant to extra and interdisciplinary influence, and occasionally even hostile to it. These outsider's perceptions can be ascribed to a couple of conditions that, though they by no means account for the whole, certainly exist within the musical community.

One of these perceptions is that, semiotics, *carnaval* and post-modernism notwithstanding, serious music (as the phrase implies) is still in many ways an elite, elitist field, held above and held to be above the fray by a good number of its adherents. While faithful to outmoded (though not entirely illegitimate) notions of mastery and at least partial imperviousness to social and historical influence, while properly preoccupied with formal properties and expressive purities, musical practitioners can forget that they are inevitably, in some way, affected by their material existence. As they are affected, so is their work, if only indirectly.

Even when attitudes are not quite elitist, it is still true that music, and musicology in particular, is a specialized field. The microscopic examination of any object can obscure that object's setting and the circumstances external to it. Musical insularity proceeds from here, and indeed corresponding conditions can be found within any specialization. There is a tension between the specific and the fairly generalized knowledge typical of popular discourses. Broad surveys can miss the details and contradictions that make academic scholarship so important and, sometimes, so enjoyable. But academic scholarship can also resist the contextualization that the general can provide, thereby blocking possible connections with lay constituencies.

The relevance of this tension to this study is that resistance can also inhibit relationships between specialists in different fields. Initiates can be impatient with a

newcomer's scholarly baby steps, and the outwardly banal insights that they lead to. But baby steps are essential to the beginner; as one enters into a new discipline, undue attention to that discipline's specialized cutting edges may obscure its more fundamental, if unexceptionable roots. Clearly, without roots, connections that spring up are in danger of withering quickly away.

It is not only the newcomer that needs to step back from elite or specialized sensibilities. Specialization's inward look also can mask the salutary effects of others' elementary investigations. Even received wisdom can be groundbreaking, when innovation occurs in new combinations of the received. A film scholar's study of classical music holds this possibility, especially in the ways that music interacts with the motion picture medium. More than in music, specialized research in media and literary studies has attended to popular perception and reception.¹ Transposed to a musical setting, such research would remind us that listeners not only hear the music in the midst of their own social and historical circumstance, but a vast majority of them (us) do so at a musicological level very much below the thin-aired engagement of the experts. And yet that hearing is also essential to an understanding of music's meaning, as well as its emotional and cultural affects. This study will attend primarily to film/music interactions, both theoretical and actual. However, interpretive strategies and specific interpretations discussed in later chapters imply, through my own response, how important setting and reception is not only to the understanding of classical music in film, but to the understanding of the music itself.

In academic practice, musicology has attended fairly exclusively to musical content. Context--the extra-musical conditions under which music is composed and heard--is mostly left to other commentators.

Musicology is perceived as dealing essentially with the factual, the documentary, the verifiable, the analyzable, the positivistic. Musicologists are respected for the facts they know about music. They are not admired for their insight into music as aesthetic experience.²

Conventional musicological activity is important, and needs no justification. But music scholar Joseph Kerman asks whether musicologists do enough.

Why should analysts concentrate solely on the internal structure of the individual work of art as an autonomous entity, and take no account of such considerable matters as history, communication, affect, texts and programmes, the existence of other works of art, and so much else?³

For Kerman, musicology's collection of facts and details masks a reluctance to interpret, and thus to engage with the world which gives music significance.⁴

There have been alternatives to this kind of musical positivism, but musicology has generally been very unsympathetic to them. Donald Tovey, Deryck Cooke and Leonard Meyer are notable contextualizers, whose work has had some extra-musical attention and influence. Recently musicologists have tended to concentrate on their perceived inadequacies (respectively, an over dependence on elaborate extra-musical metaphors, scrambled semiotics, pandering)⁵. As a result these figures have sometimes been slighted or even ignored, but as Kerman points out, for all they may have lacked,

¹ . See, for example, Belton, John (ed.), 1996, Movies and mass culture, New Brunswick, Rutgers University Press; Staiger, 1992, Interpreting films: studies in the historical reception of American Cinema, Princeton, Princeton University Press, etc.

². Kerman, 1985, 12.

³. Ibid, 18.

⁴. Ibid, 31-59, 79-90.

they did something essential. These writers sought to connect to popular audiences, regardless of what elites might think.⁶

Whatever these writers' shortcomings, I will hope to take from them something quite essential. As Kerman points out in reference to Meyer, they deal "with music as perceived by listeners. The theory is oriented towards the receptor rather than the stimulus, to the listener who experiences 'emotion and meaning' rather than the composer who puts them in."⁷

This is the sensibility informing the musical components of my own study. I will consider composers and listeners both, but I will do so primarily as an informed but lay listener, one who is not in a position to add to the valuable literature of musicological detail. I will seek rather to elaborate on the other, underdeveloped side of the equation: context. I will set forth some theoretical and critical strategies for dealing with music in a setting which is not strictly, or at least absolutely musical. I will demonstrate said strategies through some film/music content analysis, and then venture some interpretations, of various sorts and predicated on various traditions, that will situate that content more clearly. These interpretations go from a listener to others with similar backgrounds, and to musicians who don't yet share them.

This background to which I refer is characterized by Edward Said in his book Musical Elaborations (1991). In this work Said applies literary/cultural tools to music, observing that music has not applied valuable advances from these fields (the work of theorists like Raymond Williams, Roland Barthes, Michel Foucault, Stuart Hall, Jacques Derrida, Frederick Jameson, etc.), and that it has harmed itself in not so doing. Said

⁵. See Tovey, 1937, Meyer, 1956, Cooke, 1959. For criticism see Monelle, 1992, 1-30.

⁶. Kerman, 1985, 107.

⁷. Ibid., 108. The phrase "emotion and meaning" refers to the title of Meyer's 1956 book, Emotion and Meaning in Music.

observes that when even hermetics like Joyce and Mallarmé are being read ideologically or psychoanalytically, music can and should receive similar scrutiny.⁸

But there are difficulties attached to this kind of border crossing. Before continuing with the main body of this study, I wish briefly to address some of the challenges and benefits of interdisciplinary study, especially in the areas of film and music.

The *Sunday Times* had the following to say about film music. "At its best, the big idea (about film music) is not simply to get the music to sell the movie, and vice versa, but to use the power of one to enhance, and make explicit, the mood of the other."⁹ And again, in reference to the BBC's 1994 television production of Dickens' *Martin Chuzzlewit*: "If there was music, it was perfect, because I can't remember hearing any."¹⁰ These comments, respectively introductory and slightly facetious as they are, suggest a number of intriguing things about the status and function of film music in general popular discourse.

The Culture section of *The Times* proclaims reasonably expert correspondents, and assumes a broadly informed readership. In light of these it is interesting to note how a fairly obvious, banal insight--that music enhances mood in film--should be seen by the author as something fresh, or that he should feel to present it as such to his readers. Whether the lack lies with the writer, his grasp of reader background, in the experience of the readers themselves, or in some combination of the three, something is suggested here. Despite its long participation in the making and inflecting of meaning in movies, music remains in many ways and in many instances an unconsidered, un-understood, unsung component of the cinematic equation. That this is so is at least partly due to the

⁸. Said, 1991, xiv-xvi. Elaboration is by no means a new concept. Donald Tovey's musical criticism contains many striking extrapolations from extra-musical discourse. See for instance, his comments on the relations between Mendelssohn's incidental music to *A Midsummernight's Dream* and Shakespeare's play. Tovey, 1937, IV, 102-109.

⁹. Sandall, Robert, 1994, "You've seen the film...", *Times*, October 23, sec. 10, p.19.

¹⁰. Gill, A.A., 1994, "Suds' law", *Times*, November 13, sec. 10, p.3.

persistence of an ancient film-musical platitude, which abides despite a good deal of theorizing and practicing suggestive of other possibilities.

The second quote from *The Times* reflects this platitude, that music is subordinate to the image and to the narrative impulse, that music's role is to meekly reinforce these more important players, and to not call attention to itself as it does so.¹¹ That this has generally been, and continues to generally be the case is not disputed.¹² What is interesting is that the *Times* writers should take this so much for granted. That they do so leads us to a dilemma that motivates the present project, which seeks to overcome this dilemma even as it inevitably suffers from some of its effects.

It is not my desire to denigrate these writers' incidental banalities, but rather to suggest through them a very pressing problem, a central challenge to writers in any cultural field. Critics of popular music and of television state painfully obvious, or patently incomplete notions about film music. Their gaffes are not unique, nor are they signs of any special inadequacy. Given exponentially expanding repertoires and the staggering proliferation of writing in every discipline, the difficulties of merely keeping up, even in a single area of study, have become very great. Such being the case, the challenge of currency in additional media is a very daunting one indeed.

Said is aware (as am I) of the possibilities and problems of poaching from enclosed disciplines. Nevertheless, he expresses faith in the value and validity of this course, through the concept of transgression, of venturing where one does not belong.

In its most literal sense transgression means to cross over, but rather than simply leave it at that. I want to insist that the notion does not necessarily

¹¹. This idea was first and most influentially stated in London, 1936, 37.

¹². The title of Claudia Gorbman's Unheard Melodies: Narrative Film Music is very suggestive of the subservient, even subjugated status of film music throughout the history of the medium. Her book is just one of many convincing works that trace the whys and ways of this kind of musical functioning. See "mapping the field" section in this chapter, and the discussion on parallelism in chapter three.

imply some irrevocable action against law or divinity. Secular transgression chiefly involves moving from one domain to another, the testing and challenging of limits, the mixing and intermingling of heterogeneities, cutting across expectations, providing unforeseen pleasures, discoveries, experiences.¹³

For all the errors incident to travelling in unfamiliar critical territory, it is just this venturing forth, this kind of transgression that provides the solution to the exclusivities and irrelevancies feared by Joseph Kerman. Said continues.

(T)he transgressive element in music is its nomadic ability to attach itself to, and become a part of, social formations, to vary its articulations and rhetoric depending on the occasion as well as the audience, plus the power and the gender situations in which it takes place.¹⁴

In other words, music is multivalent, built for context and re-context, though social/musical custom may blind us to the fact.

How do we connect music to social formations? Where are these instructive transgressions found? Said notes that "*references and allusions*, negative and positive, create the context of musical presentation and representation."¹⁵ Musicologists may not be accustomed to look in their sphere, but films are already built on references and allusions, both textual and, as much study in recent years has demonstrated, intertextual. This being so, it seems especially useful to investigate serious music through film, and as it is appropriated in film. Here references and allusions are more customary, can be

¹³. Said, 1991, 55.

¹⁴. Ibid., 70.

¹⁵. Ibid., 90. Emphasis added.

made more explicitly, and its associations and affects can perhaps be seen in greater relief.

What I hope to demonstrate then is that these associations foreground what is too often unacknowledged in musical culture: context, which gives the a-historical a time, a place, a specificity, a history. But it is not only music that benefits from some film or literary customs. Film, and film music, are obviously enriched by musical culture as well. Here is the reason. The above quotes from *The Times* reflect two points--a persistent ignorance about film music, and an impoverished idea of its possibilities. These are very much indicative of a predominant perception about scores for films. However this perception in no way predominates in the study of music itself.

Even once despised popular musical forms, long buttressed by the informed enthusiasms of passionate critics, not to mention the enthusiastic patronage of its millions of listeners, have generated a considerable range of very substantial writing at a number of levels. This writing implies substantial reading, and listening too; popular music is being appreciated in the many ways, for the many ways that it functions as music, and as the music functions in our lives. As for "serious" music, centuries of activity testifies of even greater awareness, and of practically innumerable levels of significance as they pertain to its composition, performance and affect. In addition to musicological practice, popular music's example could well be applied to serious music: not just function, but function contextualized.

All this being the case, it is my intention to indicate something of the range and expressive possibility of music in films through an investigation of *classical music*, as it has been utilized in the narrative film specifically. In doing so I will look not only at the conventions of film and film music, but at music itself as an independent form. Then, in bringing musical discipline and musical legitimacy back to bear on movie music, I hope to show how that discipline, combined with the narrative manufacture of meaning in the movies, actually multiplies that meaning, leading to a richer, more complex play. It

multiplies feeling, or affect, as well. I wish to state what, unfortunately does not seem to be obvious enough: movie music can be, like plain old music, rigorous, meaningful, and susceptible to a very great many insights and enjoyments.

There has been a predominating lack of context and social engagement in musicology. Since this is the case, Said says that "it must fall to rank outsiders with no professional musicological reputation at stake to venture the risky, often impressionistic theorizing and descriptions" that are required.¹⁶ Commenting on music from outside the discipline can be risky. But attached to the risk are perspectives that promise great value and insight.

Mapping the Field

To begin, then, I would like to survey the literature, generated from film and film music communities, dealing with classical music in film. Is there precedent for this kind of study? Positive attention has been infrequent; since the advent of sound the use of classical music in film has been almost universally condemned, by commentators and practitioners alike. Early commentaries and compilations show that film music in the silent period drew broadly, even predominantly upon the classical repertory.¹⁷ These publications list columns of composers, along with scores of their compositions, and very specific suggestions about how to use the music in films. Tony Thomas quotes Max Winkler, "the man who invented the film music cue sheet," on the nature of that use.

We turned to crime. We began to dismember the great masters. We murdered the works of Beethoven, Mozart, Grieg, J.S. Bach, Verdi, Bizet, Tchaikowsky and Wagner--everything that wasn't protected by copyright

¹⁶. Ibid., xvii.

¹⁷. See George, 1912 and 1914, Becce, 1919 (cited in London 1936, 55), Lang and West, 1920, Rapée, 1924 and 1925. It should be noted that, while I will make some reference to silent film music, my emphasis for the most part will be on the sound film.

from our pilfering. Today I look in shame and awe at the printed copies of these mutilated masterpieces. I hope this belated confession will grant me forgiveness for what I have done.¹⁸

Partly because of the tone of Winkler's frequently quoted confession, compilations have not been very favourably, or even carefully considered. Kurt London, who's Film Music (1936) is seen as the first self consciously critical account of movie scores, introduces the typical response, seeing the end of borrowing as the beginning of film music maturity. "The system of compiled film illustrations remained, even in its greatest perfection, only a makeshift."¹⁹

But illustrations generally fell far short of perfection. London was attempting to prove that film music could be an art in itself, and so puts the best face on things.²⁰ By the time Hanns Eisler's seminal Composing for the Films (co-written with the uncredited Theodor Adorno) was published in 1947, allowances are no longer being made.

Eisler and Adorno briefly and dismissively discuss the use of classical music as part of their book's opening offensive, "Prejudices and Bad Habits."²¹ "One of the worst practices (in film music composition) is the incessant use of a limited number of worn-out musical pieces that are associated with the given screen situations by reason of their actual or traditional titles." But they see this practice as more than just an annoyance, and elaborate on the consequences throughout the book. Borrowing is emblematic of all that is rootless and inferior about film music.

(I)t is preposterous to use words such as 'history' with reference to an apocryphal branch of art like motion-picture music. The person who

¹⁸. Thomas, 1973, 37-8. See also Karlin, 1994, 156-7.

¹⁹. London, 1936, 62. Cf. film composer Leonard Rosenman, quoted in Thomas, 1979, 237.

²⁰. London, 1936, 78-9.

around 1910 first conceived the repulsive idea of using the Bridal March from *Lohengrin* as an accompaniment is no more of a historical figure than any other second-hand dealer.²²

The writers note that the practice of appropriating classical music is these days retained only in "cheap pictures," but still find it "a nuisance." "It is only a special instance of the general practice of rummaging through all our cultural inheritance for commercial purposes, which characterizes the cultural industry."²³

Among other things, a kind of modernist elitism operates here. Writing in the same year, British film music writer John Huntley offers a different kind of caution.

(T)he associations which individual members of the audience may have in relation to a certain piece of well-known music are quite beyond the control of the director of a film in which it is used; indeed it may produce an effect on the individual entirely different to the one he wants, or it will almost certainly produce a distraction (which may occur at a vital moment in the plot and spoil the whole effect of the film), because of these private reminiscences which are evoked by the music.²⁴

Huntley is motivated by more than just snobbery. For him it is not only that quotation is tired, it is also dangerous. Pre-composed music can upset film hierarchies (narrative explicit, ideology effaced), and unduly open up the traditional narrative film.

²¹. Chapter one in Eisler, 1947, 3-19.

²². Ibid., 15, 49.

²³. Ibid, 15-16, 49, 82. See also their introduction, ix-xi. Eisler and Adorno do note the potential "charming disproportion" of, say, "Pluto galloping over the ice to the ride of the Walkyries." (17) For more on such oppositional possibilities, see "counterpoint" section in my chapter three.

²⁴. Huntley, 1947, 53-4.

These two sets of dismissals and warnings set the tone for a whole generation of film music commentators to come. To one degree or another, they all repeated the same refrains.²⁵ Writing on early film music practice, Charles Berg observes that

(t)he employment of mechanical pianos and random phonographic accompaniments...indicates the rather narrow and arbitrary attitude toward music that prevailed. These mechanical accompaniments which were not capable of responding to the shifting moods and situations on the screen eliminated the possibility of music giving any substantial dramatic support to the film.²⁶

Berg's observation, written in the 1970s, is based on historical documentation, but his judgments about dramatic support are similar to the sentiments of his contemporaries. Many commentators from this period are not so much historians or rigorous scholars, as informed and passionate aficionados. As a result, instead of observing patterns and identifying causes, much of what they write aggressively advocates, prescribes and forbids. Their views on classical music are much affected.

Roy Prendergast is skeptical about the usefulness of previously composed music. "(T)he music for (concert music films), however great on its own merits, was really the antithesis of good film music, for it was certainly not conceived with the dramatic requirements of the picture in mind."²⁷ Is this true? Frequently what we intend is not the same as what we accomplish, and yet something is accomplished. Prendergast's objection does not hold, until we look more closely at what underpins it.

²⁵. This is not to say that their repetitions were unconsidered. But as I hope to demonstrate, there are other ways to look at these issues.

²⁶. Berg, 1976, 17.

²⁷. Prendergast, 1992, 70.

We would not underline a dramatic film with a Beethoven symphony because, no matter how good the film, the audience might end up listening to Beethoven. In short, good film music is a purely functional aspect of...drama.²⁸

Here is a strangely conflicting statement, with defensiveness (the fear of Beethoven) coinciding with too much modesty (film music should be purely functional, and not call attention to itself). Much film music writing still betrays this conflict, with inferiority complexes exacerbated by lack of ambition. The result is that very practical, how-to type concerns can flare up into disproportionately strong feeling.

Irwin Bazelon objects to the use of the standard repertoire for mere "emotional saccharine." He expects the musician to object too.

To a music-loving purist the use of concert music in films of this type is *offensive* because the original mood and tone, organic to the composition's formal structure, are altered when combined with oversweetened narrative.²⁹

Ernest Lindgren echoes John Huntley, summarizing this still standard view about the possible duplicities of film music, and then using some remarkably emphatic language.

The use of well-known music is...distracting, and has the additional disadvantage that it often has certain associations for the spectator which

²⁸. Williams, Martin, "Jazz at the movies," in Limbacher, ed., 1974, 42. Cf. composer Ernest Gold: "I wouldn't use classical music as a score, I think it interferes. If you know the music, it draws more attention to itself than it should...If you don't know the music, it doesn't support the picture because it wasn't written for the picture." Quoted in Larson, 1987, 351-2.

²⁹. Bazelon, 1975, 133. Emphasis added.

may conflict entirely with the associations the producer wishes to establish in his film....The use of classical music for sound films is entirely to be deplored.³⁰

Lindgren's strong sentiments are almost universal among the film composing community, which adds a new issue to the mix. Composers repeatedly emphasize how pre-composition is an emblem of various dire philistinisms.

Producers will rest content (to tolerate mediocre film music) so long as movie critics, like the movie-going public itself, continue to exhibit their altogether remarkable insensitivity to all film music except popular songs, folk tunes, ballads or familiar concert and opera classics; and so long as music critics continue to ignore film music completely.³¹

It can be said that this statement equates philistinism with the mistreatment of artists, in this case film music artists. Pre-composed tunes are an emblem and element of this mistreatment. So it is that many complaints against this music emerge as statements of solidarity for put-upon members of the composers' fraternity.

Tony Thomas defends Alfred Newman, who's contribution to George Stevens' The Greatest Story Ever Told (1965) was much derided.

The more snide among the critics sneered at Newman's 'attempting to glorify his own music by incorporating Verdi and Handel' but once again it was a case of the blame being laid at the wrong door. Stevens had defeated his own purpose by insisting on the *Hallelujah Chorus*; all it did

³⁰. Quoted in Flinn, 1993, 37.

³¹. Thomas, 1973, 21.

was accentuate an already overly-theatrical film. Sprinkled as it was with dozens of cameo performances by famous faces the film emerged as a rather monstrous vaudeville act.³²

Jerry Goldsmith comments on a different example of the same problem.

I remember seeing Stanley Kubrick's 2001: A Space Odyssey and cringing at what I consider to be an abominable misuse of music. I had heard the music Alex North had written for the film...It is a mistake to force music into a film, and for me *2001* was ruined by Kubrick's choice of music. His selections had no relationship, and the pieces could not comment on the film because they were not a part of it.³³

Goldsmith is addressing the familiar problems of appropriateness, the need for music to support images, the ambiguity of familiar music, which ambiguity is taken to be negative. But inseparable from his *contra*-Kubrick sentiment is the *pro*-North one. The travails of Alfred Newman and Alex North are just a part of a larger fraternal problem.

I have no tolerance for the critics who put down film music. The film composer today functions in much the same way as did Mozart, Haydn, and Bach with their weekly commitments to the church or their patrons, except that we haven't yet produced a Mozart, a Haydn, or a Bach. But it can happen.³⁴

³². Ibid, 62.

³³. Quoted in Thomas, 1979, 227-8.

³⁴. Ibid.

Goldsmith's meaning is clear: to the critical listener, stop putting us down; to the composer (and the film producer), don't use the greats, become great yourself.

The connection between classical quotation and composer tribulation is very important. For composers, especially during Hollywood's heyday, using classical music increased their sense of alienation and frustration, as it took them further away from their own goals and development as composers. Later, after the breakdown of studio orchestras, use of pre-recorded music meant, for both composer and musician, unemployment. There was no need for live bodies when a recording would do.³⁵

A related challenge is that classical music actually adds to the prejudice, the "snobbism" and ignorance that keeps film composers from receiving their full due.

The snobbism comes from outside the industry, from so-called serious music lovers who have always tended to regard that which is written for films as being of less value than what is written for the concert hall, the opera, the ballet or the theatre.³⁶

Given prejudices like these, the film music community policy, and the policy of its staunch defenders (Thomas, Bazelon, Prendergast, etc.³⁷), makes complete sense. "I... believe that original composition, not the adaptation of music from other sources, is the answer to effective film music."³⁸ That's the sense of the standard view; Bernard Hermann articulates the feeling behind it. "I think it's stupid (the use of pre-existing

³⁵. On alienation of Hollywood musicians see Eisler, 1947, 45-61 (especially note on 55-6), 112-13; Faulkner, 1971, 22, 44-57. On unemployment and other related issues see also Chanana, 1995, 82-86.

³⁶. Thomas, 1979, 7.

³⁷. For the advocates' view, see Thomas, 1973, 1979, Limbacher, 1974, Bazelon, 1975, Prendergast 1992.

³⁸. Franz Waxman, in Thomas, 1979, 55. See also British film composer Clarence Raybould, quoted in Prendergast, 1994, 20.

music). What's it got to do with the film? Nothing. Cover it with chocolate ice cream, that's about it!"³⁹

This then is the dominant thinking with regard to classical music in film, and it remains current. However other possibilities have appeared. Irene Kahn Atkins' book, Source Music for Motion Pictures (1983) is built on the constraints we have just been observing. Echoing the language of the golden age composers, and probably echoing their motivation as well, Atkins says

there is really nothing very creative about playing a record to accompany a film, even if there is a phonograph or radio on the screen. This criticism is also applicable to the use of records in nonsource background scoring, as in *2001*, The Exorcist, and Barry Lyndon. One argument against the use of records, particular orchestral ones such as 'Blue Danube' and '*Also Sprach Zarathustra*,' is that they have a frozen, conealed-in-aspic quality; another, that they are a throwback to the clichés of silent theater music, with 'tried-and-true' classics from 'the old masters.'⁴⁰

Using records is not creative, presumably, because no one created any new music, and therefore they were not paid, and they were not enhanced in reputation, and neither was the film medium itself.⁴¹ I will hope to show through this study that, beyond a not insignificant concern for the livelihood and reputation of film composers, these sentiments are simply not true.

³⁹. Quoted in Brown, 1994, 291. In contrast to this overwhelming rejection Brown (1988, 177-80) very briefly discusses a strain of acceptance for this music, continuing from silent practices well into the sound period. This acknowledgment, however, is fairly unique in the current literature.

⁴⁰. Atkins, 1983, 58.

⁴¹. Cf. Bernstein, Elmer, 1972. Also in *Film Music Notebook* 1, Winter 1974, 10-16

Atkins' book is designed "to show the way in which source music can enhance the dramatic elements in a film."⁴² For her, "source music" is that which, regardless of its point of emanation, "is audible to the characters of the film."⁴³ It is almost always pre-composed, pre-recorded music. For Atkins, "enhance" implies an evaluative model evident throughout the book, and throughout the work of other writers quoted in this section. There is recurring consideration of music that works and music that doesn't, "working" meaning to reinforce meaning and unify disparate cinematic elements.

The fact is that though one can argue about more or less successful music, all music enhances, if we take enhance to mean that it inflects and enriches, whether for unity or multiplicity. It is likewise true that actual instances of musical elaboration far exceed the constraints of audible emanations, or even standard diegetic/non-diegetic splits. Claudia Gorbman, for instance, points out the frequent presence of "metadiegetic" film music, which straddles in multifarious ways between the usually theorized inner and outer spaces. In fact, film music maintains a complex and shifting relationship of "mutual implication" with the image track, the permutations of which result in a rich and constantly negotiated "*combinatoire* of expression."⁴⁴

In this light the traditional formulations described by film-music advocates in this section become limiting. Not only is music expressive all the way across the sound track, so too can image express regardless of its accompanying music's temporal or compositional origins. With the possibilities, and realities too, of Gorbman's mutual implication, it is clearly not necessary to so smother notions of music's affect, nor is it necessary to proscribe the music being used.

⁴². Atkins, 1983, 17.

⁴³. Ibid., 13.

⁴⁴. Gorbman, 1987, 15-6, 20-26. In this connection Gorbman also discusses the dialogue and sound effects tracks. These are obviously important elements of these image/sound relationships. Notwithstanding, this work will concentrate mostly on musical uses.

As mentioned, I do feel that Atkins' book is valuable for the way it hinted at other possibilities beyond the accepted film-musical norm. She is one of the first writers to call attention, in a serious and sometimes sympathetic way, to the possibilities of using source, or pre-composed music in films. This is a shift which, followed by a rush of other film musical elaborations (see discussion in next section), opens up a place for the present work. Following Gorbman's terminological lead, I have expanded Atkins' definition of source music to include any (in this instance classical) piece composed previous to the film's production, and occurring somewhere across the cinematic soundscape (non-diegetic, diegetic or metadiagetic). On that broad spectrum distinctions must--and will--be made between different articulations and variations.⁴⁵ But now I wish simply to take Atkins's original focus on pre-existing music, and through it demonstrate some of the many ways that attention to this element of the *combinatoire* enhances and enriches the cinematic equation.

Finding a Place for Source Music in Film

As we have seen, much writing on film music, and on source music in film, simply states what the writer prefers and then condemns that which departs. I will briefly set forth here, and then go on to make use of some strategies that seem to me to be more useful. Some of these relate directly to film music, while others come from different settings and require some transposition.

In place of the familiar demands and advocacies I suggest a kind of subordination, where the viewer/listener stops wrestling and simply tries to understand. C.S. Lewis' extremely valuable Experiment in Criticism (1961) calls for an alternative to the evaluative criticism we have already seen. Instead of self-aggrandizement through critical prescription, Lewis recommends the enlargement of self through the acceptance

⁴⁵ . See my chapter five for a fuller discussion of diegetic, non-diegetic and meta-diegetic issues.

and embrace of others. What does the book have for the reader? What is in the text (film)? Having established these, the reader/viewer simply, and humbly, tries to learn.⁴⁶

This strategy is of course familiar from the writings of André Bazin. Bazin felt that, though medium specificity (Rudolf Arnheim, the Soviets) had been important at one point, the cinema was mature enough to stop having to separate itself from the other arts. He advocated the occasional subordination of cinematic impulse to a pre-existing text, sensibility, philosophy. With such subordination, the other could not only be recontextualized in an enlightening fashion, but film itself could be enriched as well.⁴⁷ The implications for considering classical music in film in this way are obvious.

Lewis and Bazin bring us to other complimentary strategies. The title of Susan Sontag's influential essay *Against Interpretation* (1964) offers a rebuttal to over fussy film musician prescription. Sontag suggests that to interpret is to wrest or justify a work that requires, deserves neither. Interpretation is not absolute, and

in most modern instances, interpretation amounts to the philistine refusal to leave the work of art alone. Real art has the capacity to make us nervous. By reducing the work of art to its content and then interpreting *that*, one tames the work of art. Interpretation makes art manageable, comfortable.⁴⁸

Clearly classical music can make some film types uncomfortable, but their discomfort limits film itself. Opening eyes (or ears) can open up the medium. "The

⁴⁶. Lewis, C.S., 1961, An experiment in criticism, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press, see especially 104-41.

⁴⁷. Bazin, André, 1967, What is cinema?, ed. Hugh Gray, Berkeley, University of California. See particularly "In defense of mixed cinema" (53-75), "Theatre and cinema" (parts one and two, 76-94, 95-124), and "*Le journal d'un curé de campagne* and the stylistics of Robert Bresson" (125-43).

⁴⁸. Sontag, 1983, "Against interpretation," in A Susan Sontag reader, New York, Vintage, 97, 99.

function of criticism should be to show *how it is what it is*, even *that it is what it is*, rather than to show *what it means*."⁴⁹

David Bordwell and Kristin Thompson have developed these strategies in their wide-ranging neo-formalist studies. Without advocating an absolute end to interpretation, Bordwell suggests "that art is an affair of perception, and as such it presents the perceiver with problems of unity and disunity." But these problems need not be solved; conflicts in art are frequently unresolved, and struggle and strangeness are not stages to pass through, but valid destinations. Instead of finding meaning that delimits, Bordwell seeks to articulate, to explicate, and to leave open aesthetic experience.⁵⁰

Again, the relevance of this course to film music study is obvious. Commentators would do well to stop objecting so much and just start observing. Even Eisler and Adorno suggest as much when they point out that strict universal criteria cannot be applied to uses of film music. Quoting Hegel, they see potential harm in bringing "one's own yardsticks and (applying) one's personal intuition and ideas to the inquiry; it is only by omitting these that we are enabled to examine the subject matter as it is in and for itself."

In addition to the typological refinements already mentioned, Claudia Gorbman's groundbreaking 1987 study, Unheard Melodies: Narrative Film Music, also demonstrates just this kind of clear calm. Gorbman takes important film/music contexts (narratology and film music, the reasons music is used, its relationship to the spectator, the classical Hollywood model and the Eisler/Adorno critique) and describes them, leaving aside distracting and distorting advocacies and antipathies. But once again, in comparing pre-existing models she also effects an important expansion. The primordial

⁴⁹. Ibid., 104.

⁵⁰. Bordwell, 1981, The films of Carl-Theodor Dreyer, Berkeley and Los Angeles, University of California Press, 3-4, 60-1, 186. See also "Why not to read a film" in Bordwell, 1989, 249-274.

division of film music between poles of parallelism and perpendicularity becomes, in Gorbman's *combinatoire*, a much more open and interesting system. In terms of the object of study here this means that whatever the musical source of idea and affect, it deserves our attention.

In the same way then Kathryn Kalinak's 1992 book, Settling the Score: Music and the Classical Hollywood Film, also takes a more objective view of Hollywood scoring conventions. While detailing the way things have been, Kalinak implicitly suggests that what *has been* is not what *must be*. Although neither of these books deals primarily with source music, or classical source music, their scholarly calm and openness do provide a context where this music can be and even must be observed, calmly and sympathetically.⁵¹

Where scholars have at times been inattentive, it is important to point out that film production practice has frequently pushed theoretical boundaries and opened new ground for the study of classical music in film. For instance, classical music is integral to the provocative soundscapes of Jean-Luc Godard. It contains some of the compelling oppositions and thematic cores in the work of Ingmar Bergman and Pier Paolo Pasolini. It is one site of Luis Buñuel's dark ironies, as well as his incongruous expressions of tenderness. It reveals material and historical structures beneath narrative surface in the work of Luchino Visconti and Martin Scorsese. Here and elsewhere⁵² this music brings in previously distant contexts to isolated music and defensive film--pre-enlightenment

⁵¹. Also antecedent to this study is Film music I, a collection published in 1989 and edited by Clifford McCarty. This collection of essays helpfully extends its inquiries into a number of diverse contexts, without priority or hierarchy. See bibliography.

⁵². The examples I have cited here obviously relate most particularly to a kind of high modernist auteurism, but there are also many other settings in which classical music can be found and studied. In the age of the compiled soundtrack album we also find a proliferation of such pieces in more commercial films. The conventional modes of film music composition have not only been changed and subverted by this increasing presence of the music industry in film production and marketing. The independent film sensibility (the Sundance film festival, etc.), and a few generations of cutting edge activity have also wrought musical changes which require and invite different critical strategies. All of these possibilities will be considered in the pages to follow.

plenitude, individualistic ideologies, the myth of the Romantic artist, formal fragmentations as well as far reaching reconciliations--all things that demand more than professional boosterism and close textual analysis, as useful as these things may sometimes be.⁵³

Royal Brown's work is also very helpful in this regard. His chapter in Gary Edgerton's book on film and the arts is one of the only works to consider at some length the specific relations between film and classical music.⁵⁴ His observations are quite preliminary, but it is an open attitude and a willingness to wander into seemingly unrelated but ultimately enlightening areas that is most of value. Avoidance of too hasty limitations allows us to contextualize the music. So in Brown's book Overtones and Undertones: Reading Film Music (1994), he advocates an active engagement with film music, which means attentive hearing and then attentive thinking. Not only should we analyze the music itself, but, as Joseph Kerman suggested, we should proceed to connect it to the film, its production, and the world of its reception.

This clearly takes us beyond neo-formalism. David Bordwell points out, and bemoans the possibility of excessive interpretive elaborations.⁵⁵ Legions of outlandish constructs support his point, but the excess is probably only egregious when the construct is being presumptuously ascribed to the artist, or presented as an absolute. My feeling is that multiple interpretations, presented as options for understanding, can be extremely useful. They show us how rich and multivalent a work can be, and give us,

⁵³. Many other filmmakers have used this music as well (Robert Bresson, Louis Malle, Werner Herzog, etc.), and numerous instances will be discussed throughout this study. With particular regard to Romanticism see Caryl Flinn's Strains of Utopia: gender, nostalgia and Hollywood film music, which among other things discusses classical film scoring in relation to musical romanticism and its various ideologies. Flinn also briefly discusses Hollywood antipathies to the use of classical music. Flinn, 1992, 13-50.

⁵⁴. Although he does deal with the topic, Brown does turn frequently from classical music to the classical Hollywood film score, which are of course not the same thing. Brown, 1988, 168-9, 179-80, 184-92 (see section entitled "styles and genres of interaction").

⁵⁵. Bordwell, 1989, 254-63. See also, for instance, an example quoted in Flinn, 1992, 67.

and others, multiple points of access and use.⁵⁶ These multiple points can also encourage a reader or a viewer who may have been cowed by absolute interpretations or daunted by the indeterminacies of formalist analysis, to join in, finding a place and a voice. In addition to letting art be, it can also be desirable to join, as a reader or viewer, in the art-making process.⁵⁷

In addressing these multiplicities, French sound theorist Michel Chion also provides a very important inspiration for my own work. In his 1985 work Le Son au Cinéma, Chion suggests, similar to the possibilities of the meta-diegetic category, a way out of the parallel/perpendicular impasse that has bedevilled film music.⁵⁸ A third category, "anempathetic" music, allows us to do more than simply support and oppose, but rather to see, and hear, how music shifts and confounds in the ways it relates to meaning.⁵⁹

In his 1994 book, Audio-Vision, Chion goes beyond the films themselves to make a similar distinction between *critical* approaches to film music. He posits three receptive categories. Causal listening seeks the source of sound, and its specific meaning. Semantic listening, which is based on codes and language, contains the possible extravagances (personal interpretations) of the causal alternative. And reduced

⁵⁶. In another setting, and as only one example out of the many possible, see two compelling and contradictory accounts of Orson Welles' The Magnificent Ambersons (1942) in Carringer, Robert L., 1993, "Oedipus in Indianapolis," in The Magnificent Ambersons: a reconstruction, Berkeley, University of California Press, 5-32; and Rosenbaum, Jonathon in Welles, Orson and Bogdanovich, Peter, 1992, This is Orson Welles, New York, Harper Collins, 454-56.

⁵⁷. The interpretation by P. Adams Sitney of some very difficult and slippery avant garde film texts is exemplary in this regard. Sitney's interpretations can (and should) be debated, but it is by interpreting and then debating that he makes these challenging films accessible and personal for viewers who might otherwise be excluded. See Sitney, 1979 (second ed.), Visionary film: the American avant garde, 1943-1978, Oxford, Oxford University Press.

⁵⁸. Once again, classical Hollywood vs. the kind of oppositional, "contrapuntal" practice advocated by Hanns Eisler. See chapter three.

⁵⁹. In Gorbman, 1987, 151-161. Gorbman clearly acknowledges her debt to Chion, and returns the favour in her translation of Audio-Vision. Incidentally, Chion is not the first to think of anempathetic possibilities in music. Eisler, quoting Busoni, notes the similar function of the *Barcarolle* in Offenbach's *Tales of Hoffman*. Eisler, 1947, 27. See also

listening, like formalism, seeks only to observe and account, without recourse to interpretation or semiotic rationalization.⁶⁰

Which approach is validated? All of them. Chion rejects methodological hierarchies, and compositional ones besides. He too effaces distinctions between diegetic and non-diegetic music, between original compositions and excerpted ones. Each option means, and each deserves attention. I agree. There are numerous points to consider when studying classical music in film. Few of them have received any substantial attention. Rather than following previous courses of prescription and proscription, I will present a broad survey of approaches. It will be left for the reader to choose and follow what he or she feels to be the most productive path.

A Note on Boundaries and Limitations

Before continuing I wish to give some idea of the extent and boundaries of this dissertation. This is not intended to be an exhaustive list of films in which classical music appears. Such a list would be useful as a resource for further study, but it would necessarily leave aside the critical work needed to provide theoretical context. Instead, as I have suggested, I will consider a number of texts, attempting to draw therefrom some general patterns and their implications for the ways films are made, both at the level of production and reception.

For "classical music" I will use the term in its generally, popularly accepted sense. It is art music which has, either in its time of composition or by some evolutionary process, come to be accepted as "serious". It is that which has been composed by the formally trained (though there are a few exceptions, such as the Russian composer Modest Mussorgsky) to be played by the formally trained. It includes that which usually falls within the standard concert hall repertory, comprising

the concept of "essence and appearance" in *ibid.*, 29, 79

⁶⁰. In Chion, 1994, 25-34.

mostly the Baroque, Classical and Romantic periods. In relation, it is generally that which has been composed and canonized long before the production of the film in which it appears. There will be some consideration of 20th century forms as well, especially that which derives from the traditions and culture of classical music. I will not generally deal with opera, though its utilization in film has been very frequent, and raises many of the same issues that will be discussed here. As for compositions and composers which have to a degree become serious after the fact (George Gershwin, Kurt Weill), there will be only passing mention.

"Narrative film" will be even more loosely utilized. It is that which tells a story of some kind, which is of course true to most fiction and much of non-fiction production. Narratives can range from the most familiar conventions to the most stringent boundary stretching. Narratives both transparent and opaque fall within the purview of this study, and though avant gardes are officially outside the present scope, there will be some reference to these traditions as well.

CHAPTER 2

FILM MUSIC AND THE MUSICAL COMMUNITY

In the first chapter I discussed the challenge of interdisciplinary study, and this second one will illustrate an important embodiment of that challenge. We have seen the responses of film composers to classical music, as well as the observations of several different writers and scholars. We have seen that the former group has predominantly condemned direct use of classical cues. However, that condemnation notwithstanding, film musicians did consistently seek to appropriate other elements of classical musical culture within their own work.

I will briefly discuss some of these strategies, and then go on to consider some of the ways that *musicians* and *music* critics have responded, both to specific instances of poaching, and to film music in general.

In addition, I will also seek to situate musical criticism within a larger critical context. We have already seen how traditional musicology has tended not to go beyond purely musical facts. The thoughts of other cultural figures will help us to place and understand some of these facts, and the way musicology inflects their interpretation in film settings. With that broader cultural ground illuminated, I will go on in later chapters to discuss ways that both film and music, as well as their respective communities, can benefit by mutual association.

First I will present an illustration of a typical unsympathetic musical response to film music. In his foreward to a UNESCO catalogue of films for music education, John Madison is sarcastic about music's traditional subservience in film. "Stronger mortals may abjure what they feel to be the irrelevancies of how musical sound is produced; certainly where visual stimuli come between the creative artist and his audience they are to be deplored." Madison here touches upon the common feeling that the material

realities of this visual medium, together with the narrative preferences of filmmakers (and audiences), marginalize music.

His solution does not account for the possibility that these realities and preferences might be valid. Piqued by music's traditional subordination, Madison goes on to suggest that film's greatest service to music could be, should be to reinscribe the materiality of music, the facts of its production and enjoyment, in the viewers' consciousness. Films should at least partly be about the making of music. "Film techniques can, at their best, recapture what may be called the social dimension, recalling and revivifying the personality of a great musician or quickening the sense of occasion, whether of a chamber recital, an opera or a grandiose festival."⁶¹

This is essentially a musical version of André Bazin's discussion of photographic ontology⁶², and valuable as far as it goes. But from Madison's music-first position there is no awareness of or concern for whether film might not have its own ontology, its own ways of expressiveness, its own artful destiny. What Madison suggests, a half century after film started to reject the notion, is a validation of film through validation of the non-filmic.⁶³

The UNESCO catalogue concentrates on filmed musical performances, a few documentaries, and the odd low budget narrative made for educational purposes. The only feature films listed as using music educatively are rare exceptions to the usual philistine run of things.⁶⁴ For the rest, according to this account, film dishonours music.

This is the situation, then, or at least the face of it. Such discounting has been fairly typical. "Film music can do a great many things but something it apparently

⁶¹. International Music Centre, 1962, 5.

⁶². Bazin, André, 1967, "The ontology of the photographic image," in What is Cinema?, Berkeley, University of California Press.

⁶³. Cf. the *films d'art* of cinema's early years.

⁶⁴. The Archers' The Tales of Hoffmann (1951) (co-produced by "Emerio" Pressburger), Eisenstein/Prokofiev's Alexander Nevsky (1938) and Pabst/Brecht/Weill's The Three-Penny Opera (1931). International Music Centre, 1962, 104, 111.

cannot do is overcome its own rather dubious reputation. Most musical intellectuals regard film scoring as a medium of slick, conventional, cliché-ridden composition..."⁶⁵

Naturally the film music community takes issue, and it takes action as well. But the predominant responses to such musical rejection are as much appropriations of the classical as any use of a precomposed cue. These appropriations have been understandably seen by musicians as transgressive, in which transgression is contained an ignoring or even an ignorance of present conditions and the pressing imperatives they bring. I will return to these criticisms. For now I will set forth some of the actions that gave rise to them.

Film music rationalization appears in a number of guises. One of the most important of these is demonstrated by Max Steiner.

Often complimented as the man who invented movie music, Steiner would reply, 'Nonsense. The idea originated with Richard Wagner. Listen to the incidental scoring behind the recitatives in his opera. If Wagner had lived in this century, he would have been the Number One film composer.'⁶⁶

Film composers sought to appropriate the reputation and culture of their forebears, or at least the most respectable of them. Steiner's comment is not as modest as it might seem. He was very much aware of film music's lowly reputation. Rather than being monarch of that paltry kingdom, Steiner deftly conflates high opera and melodramatic movie scoring, thus bringing himself into fellowship with Wagner, and bringing the entire film composers' fraternity with him.

⁶⁵. Thomas, 1973, 18. See Eisler, 1947, 62-3 for a withering expression of this low regard.

⁶⁶. In Thomas, 1973, 122. See Brown, 1988, 170, for a contemporary affirmation of the relevance of Wagner to picture music.

This connection is urged throughout early film music discourse. Steiner, again:

In my early days in Vienna, Richard Strauss and Gustav Mahler had enormous influence on all budding composers, and theirs were the styles everyone tried to emulate. Later we became aware of the French school, of men like Debussy and Ravel, followed by the great impact of Stravinsky. And of course Beethoven, Mozart, and Brahms were all basic to us. We sort of inhaled them as we grew up.⁶⁷

The refrain of legitimation by association is taken up frequently by the first generation of film music scholarship as well. Tony Thomas deftly indicates how this Viennese abundance made its way to Hollywood.

While both were richly melodic and obviously Viennese, Steiner was the product of an operetta background and (Erich Wolfgang) Korngold came from somewhat further up the street--from the opera house and the concert hall...Vienna, *like Hollywood*, was an artistic mecca.⁶⁸

Just as early film sought legitimization by drawing from respectable authors and their works, so film music used the validated to attain its own respectability. After the silent period the use of actual classical music was officially discouraged⁶⁹, but the suggestion is that this is no great loss. Being that the film composers are real heirs to their classical--or more properly romantic--forebears, past bounty gives way without a break to present musical reality.

⁶⁷. Thomas, 1979, 107. Steiner, ca. 1964, is full of name droppings and protestations of legitimacy through proximity to august musical personages.

⁶⁸. Thomas, 1973, 73, 107, emphasis added.

⁶⁹. Though in fact usage remained frequent. I will go on to discuss these uses.

Another important variation of this theme can also be marked through sound film's first decades. A common rebuttal to musical snobbery is similar to the previously cited, and not necessarily very cinematic UNESCO course. Kurt London's seminal study contains an emblematic chapter, entitled "Prominent European Film Composers and their artistic significance."⁷⁰

The opening and through argument of John Huntley's British Film Music is the continuing avowal of serious composers working in the cinema. Where in the silent period it was hoped that the film medium in general would be exalted through proximity to dead musical masters⁷¹, we see in Huntley's work a certain progression. Now it is film music itself, and British film music specifically, that benefits in the company of revered *living* composers.

In these themes there is some truth, but there is a tangible discomfort in stating it. The tone is apologetic, and the terms of favour are distinctly dictated by the music community. The question of terms leads us to an even more fundamental and egregious classical usage. Film composers borrowed more than just traditions and reputations. Throughout the classical period of Hollywood film composition, classical music *forms* were also wholeheartedly (if not completely rigourously) utilized.

Romanticism and Modernism as Relating to Hollywood Film Music

British film music pioneer Muir Mathieson (to whom Huntley's book was dedicated) observed in a 1971 interview that film fulfilled the notion of *gesamptkunstwerk* to an extent never envisioned by Wagner.⁷² This is at least part of the

⁷⁰. London, 1936, 211. Note the use of capitals. The New Grove summarizes Ernest Irving's career by noting that "he was responsible for engaging a number of distinguished (British) composers to write film scores" (for British films in the 1930s and 40s). For this Irving, as well as Muir Mathieson, are credited for finally making film music a serious proposition. See article on Irving in Sadie, ed., 1980, 9: 329. For similar sentiments from another perspective see Previn, 1991, 91-99.

⁷¹. Cf. George, 1912, 1914, Lang and West, 1920, Rapée, 1924, 1925.

⁷². Interview with Ken Secorra, broadcast during the program "Carl Davis on Film

point of Max Steiner's previously quoted comment about Wagner. In the first decades of sound films the techniques and conventions informing the work of Wagner (and R. Strauss and Gustav Mahler and the rest of the composers Steiner cites) were consciously and vocally applied to film music problems.

One of the most important of these techniques, and a staple of classical Hollywood composition, was the leitmotif, by which characters and situations were identified and elaborated. The leitmotif was also a means by which otherwise diffuse and gap-filled scores were given musical unity. Of course use and defense of the leitmotif partook also of the legitimizing influence already discussed. Once again it was not only Wagner's technique, but Wagner himself that was being appropriated.

This at least was the idea. As years passed, however, observers became less convinced by claims by film music to Wagnerian vigour and validity. Hanns Eisler and Theodor Adorno asserted that because scores and films alike were generally substandard, leitmotif in film was doomed to mere and maddening repetition.⁷³ Wilfred Mellers, writing in the Grove Dictionary of Music and Musicians (5th edition, 1954), echoed the argument, finding film to be too fragmented and episodic to successfully utilize a technique designed after all for large musical structures.⁷⁴

Music," Radio 3, 21/3/95. *Gesamtkunstwerk* is Wagner's term for the integrated art work, "in which all the arts (including music, poetry, and visual spectacle) were to be perfectly fused." Randel, ed., 1986, 339.

⁷³. Eisler, 1947, 5. Keller (*Sight and Sound*, volume 15, number 60, 136) says that, far from the potentially justifiable "theme with variations," Hollywood leitmotif is more often "a theme without variations, but with plenty of repetitions."

⁷⁴. Mellers, 1954, 3: 105. Hollywood leitmotif may actually bear more resemblance to the notion of the *idée fixe*, "a melody representative of a character or feeling, which reappears in a variety of forms and develops with the changing circumstances." (MacDonald, Hugh, 1980, "*Idée fixe*," in NG, 9: 18.) Those unsympathetic to film music might point out how this musical figure slavishly reinforces the accompanied image, and overdetermines the musical material. In relation the superlative *idée fixe* (from Berlioz' *Symphonie Fantastique*) was an opium addled artist's dream of his lost beloved, whom he'd murdered (at least in his dream). In French the term means, or has come to mean "obsession." MacDonald notes that Balzac also referred to the *idée fixe*, and that it became a clinical term for unreasonable, even certifiable obsession. MacDonald, 1980, 9: 18. For a modern defense of the validity of leitmotif in film, see Brown, 1988, 165-6, 199-201.

As with the leitmotif, so too the idea of the integrated art work, at least as conceived by Wagner, came to be seen as foreign to film realities.

It is worth reconsidering here Wagner's interest in *Gesamtkunstwerk* and Hollywood's own investment in unified, coherent texts, since both maintain that textual components should work toward the same dramatic ends...The difference between Wagner and classical film commentators, however, comes from the fact that while for Wagner the unity of the music drama was achieved through the synthesis of its elements, with the total effect equaling more than the sum of its parts, classical film critics and practitioners believed cinematic unity was retained through redundancy and overdetermination, not through a true synthesis of elements.⁷⁵

The gap between theory and reality that Caryl Flinn observes here has a couple of important consequences, for the music as well as for those composing it.

The romantic style that many Hollywood composers felt themselves heir to provided a musical separation from vulgar realities. This is the classic formulation about Hollywood aims and results as well, and in this way the romantic idiom seemed to be ideal for Hollywood films.⁷⁶

The musical conventions were as follows: "nondissonant if mildly chromatic harmonies, monophonic textures, broad, sweeping melodies, and lush instrumentations,"⁷⁷ large forms, a general appeal to the sensuous, the emotional and the

⁷⁵. Flinn, 1993, 34.

⁷⁶. By "romantic" I mean the musical period dating roughly from middle Beethoven to the primes of R. Strauss and Mahler. Romanticism obviously pertains to more than just music. Many of the musical points made here could be cautiously applied to other discourses as well.

⁷⁷. Brown, 1988, 184.

inexpressible. These were exalted 19th century notions, and they applied across cultural fields. Byron and Shelley, Delacroix and David, the titanic Beethoven, Bayreuth, all bespeak a kind of heroic individualism, and the notion of art that transcends context and external consideration.⁷⁸

But by the late 19th century (and the birth of film) many cultural observers and artists and even musicians were feeling that the time for these things had passed. Other impulses had come to the fore. The outsized forms of Wagner or Gustav Mahler coexisted with smaller, more humanizing alternatives: in the narrative and visual arts with Chekhov and Ibsen and the Impressionists, in music for instance with the ethnomusicological efforts of Béla Bartok and Sabine Baring-Gould and Ralph Vaughan Williams.

They also coexisted with more troubling, and even more agonized expressions. Positivism (along with Darwin, Marx, Freud, etc.), giving way to naturalism, cubism, and especially the crises rising out of the First World War (Dada, not to mention overwhelming destruction): all came to collide with what now seemed oblivious Wagnerian largeness, which was felt to reflect only upon the largeness of Wagner (the unique artistic sensibility) or upon other bourgeois obscenities. Given this trajectory, and the weight of social realities surrounding it, the romantic notion of a complete, self-contained art work simply broke.

By one definition romanticism leans away from the topical and toward the ineffable. But it can be said, and in this period it was certainly felt, that this ineffability was disingenuous and even dangerous.

(I)f these doctrines (musical mystification) are unhesitatingly accepted by those concerned with music, as for the most part they actually are,

⁷⁸. Not the only possible take on Romanticism; see, for instance, Rosen and Zerner, 1984. Siegmeister (1938) also discusses the progressive and democratic elements of

musicians will not question the social bases of the conditions under which they work, nor the social function of their work...Composers will go on creating in the same way...contemplating the 'inner soul' and never questioning the society under which such activity is doomed to frustration in advance.⁷⁹

This account suggests that late romanticism was out of touch even with its own time, which is why modernism fled from it. Functioning these decades later, romantic film music was twice removed. Escapist mandates and their consoling consequences not only distracted audiences from their frustrations. Elie Siegmeister's statement pertains particularly to Hollywood music makers themselves. There is a paradox in the fact that film composers used and defended the idiom of individuality in an industrial context that completely effaced the individual. It is at least partly true that the celebration of romantic ideologies masked for the composers the indentured realities of their own creativity.⁸⁰

Music criticism, then as now, did not often foreground these ideological matters. And yet they were an important subtext in the music community criticism of film music and its various appropriations. A close reading suggests that for many music critics, the inadequacies of classical film music were emblematic of broader musical/cultural ills. In other words, condemnations reflected deeper biases. If criticism addressed, and continues to address inherent film music failings, it also has a foundation of extra-musical discontent with the conditions of art and its reproduction in the 20th century. We will now look closely at an important and influential music institutional critique of film music, and at some of the currents crossing beneath its surface.

early Romanticism. Here I am concentrating on its latter permutations.

⁷⁹. Siegmeister, 1938, 12. See Faulkner, 1971, for a fine book length study of the social conditions of Hollywood musicians.

⁸⁰. For evidence see Levant, 1940, Raksin, 1989, Previn, 1991.

The Grove Dictionaries

In the late 1870s Sir George Grove, the great Victorian engineer, editor and educator, undertook to prepare a comprehensive musical reference for the musical amateur. Grove's innovation and importance lay in part in the fact that he was himself an enthusiastic and informed amateur. "I wrote about the symphonies and concertos because I wished to try to make them clear to myself and to discover the secret of the things that charmed me so; and from that sprang a wish to make other amateurs see it the same way."⁸¹

Grove's first dictionary was published in four volumes in 1879-80. After this ambitious (and kindly) beginning the Grove continued to evolve, passing through four more editions (1904-1910, 1927-28, 1940 and 1954) before the twenty volume New Grove Dictionary of Music and Musicians was published in 1980. By that time it had become "(t)he standard and the largest comprehensive music encyclopedia in English and the work to which all others are currently compared."⁸²

Naturally over these one hundred years the tone of the *Grove* changed considerably. One of the most significant shifts pertains to the audience being addressed. Although *New Grove* editor Stanley Sadie declared his own intent to continue speaking to the dictionary's traditional, partly amateur, public,⁸³ it can be argued that with the passage of time, and with the increasing volume and sophistication of musical scholarship, the dictionary became in many ways a reference written for specialists, and by specialists. "This (1980) edition clearly favors the interests of music scholars rather than those of informed amateurs and performers."⁸⁴

This (partial) change can be seen in many ways, and it has a number of important consequences. A colleague noted that Sir George "undertook his task in the spirit of a

⁸¹ . Quoted in Krummel, 1981, 762.

⁸² . Duckles and Reed, ed., 1988, 14.

⁸³ . Sadie, 1975, 260. See also Shawe-Taylor, 1981, 218.

⁸⁴ . Duckles and Reed, ed., passim.

lover of beauty rather than in that of an antagonist.” But as D.W. Krummel observed, this open sentiment was eventually succeeded by a more adversarial one, and later editions gave themselves over increasingly to “invidious comparisons” and value judgments.⁸⁵ This antagonism was complex (and not universal), but it can be at least partly ascribed to an increase in scholarly specialization, and to the elitism (discussed in my first chapter) that sometimes goes with it.

However such elitism is not an absolute, but rather exists in relation to the things it purports to rise above. More important in this context than the severities of advanced scholarship are the dangers that such severity opposes. The Eric Blom-edited 1954 *Grove* is the sight of the most invidious comparisons cited by Krummel, and its areas of opprobrium are predictable, and significant.

Desmond Shawe-Taylor observes that the 1954 edition was particularly poor, and even parochial, in its coverage of ethnic and popular music. Richard Hill, in a contemporary review, described its tone as “insularity with a vengeance.” Stanley Sadie goes so far as to call *Grove* Five xenophobic.⁸⁶ Nowhere is this attitude more evident than in the discussion on film music, which appears to be heard as ethnic (read *American*) and popular in the worst ways. Why the withering disapproval? There were, of course, valid musicological objections. But additionally, Sir George’s amateur’s love of beauty, and of communicating its pleasures, were no longer admissible when popular beauties had become so dangerous, and its aficionados had gone so far astray.

From the perspective of the film music writers, George Grove’s music-for-the-people utopianism was no longer possible. In film music the beauties loved by amateurs

⁸⁵ . Krummel, 1981, 764.

⁸⁶ . Shawe-Taylor, 1981, 218; Hill, 1954, 87; Sadie, 1975, 263. Blom’s Britain-first strategy was one of the most remarked and controversial characteristics of the fifth edition. See Hill, 1954, 86. Also problematic was a related hostility to things American. Both of these attitudes are key elements to the film music entry in the 1954 dictionary. (Krummel [1981, 762] points out that the removal of anti-American biases was one of the main objectives of the supplement to Blom’s 1954 edition.)

(overwhelmingly the people composing and appreciating this music) could only be answered by antagonism.

Shawe-Taylor suggests that in using the *New Grove* specifically, “everyone is sure to come across details in his own particular field which are misleading or plain wrong.”⁸⁷ This is perhaps even more true of Blom’s edition, predating as it does the official establishment of film and media studies, at least in an official academic sense. Film music’s previously cited pugilistic reactions to musical disdain confirm how troubling this kind of misunderstanding can be. But my point is not merely, or not even to find fault with the attitudes expressed in the 1954 edition. Stanley Sadie describes the value and validity of those earlier expressions. “(W)e recognize that every age needs its own reference works, not merely to absorb extensions in factual knowledge, but also to represent the attitudes, the interpretations, the perspectives, the philosophies of the time.”⁸⁸ Some of the Grove attitudes remain with us. Paradoxically, they also suggest ways out of contemporary dilemmas.

The 1927 edition of the Grove Dictionary of Music and Musicians does not have an entry on film music. In that year it was clearly too early to discuss the sound film with any degree of perspective. Still, it must have been well known that film and music, largely lifted from classical domains, had coexisted for thirty years. It may be imagined that the Grove editors did not wish to dignify that relationship by their notice, especially since it could not have met with their approval. The 1954 edition bears out this suspicion.

Three writers, Ernest Irving, Hans Keller and Wilfred Mellers, collaborated on the film music entry. Irving opens the entry by pointing out that in film exhibition, there

⁸⁷ . Shawe-Taylor, 1981, 220.

⁸⁸ . Sadie, 1975, 259.

was music from the first. "Some of the music was, *of its kind*, excellent in quality..."⁸⁹. He says that in silent years music "had to be used" instead of dialogue, in order to make the action readable. Irving here dismisses the music, and even more the film medium itself. There is a subtle intimation that the picture, even motion pictures, were insufficient to the telling of the story, and that conversely music could carry meaning on its own. The first suggestion is mostly not true, and the second contradicts the whole burden of serious music criticism in terms of music's dalliance with film.⁹⁰ Such slightly bilious contradictions occur frequently in the Grove film music articles. Mention is made of numerous pieces adapted by "talented hacks," and exalted names like Beethoven are quite consciously placed next to the ignominious uses their music was put to ("aeroplane dives and Red-Indian chases").

Expressions are generally polite, but the fundamental attitude taken is clearly rendered in passages such as the following, which describes the selection of musical cues and their dissemination by the various musical forces. "The silent film thus made millions of people acquainted with classical music, even if in a diluted and degraded form, and certainly created a good deal of lucrative employment for the executive musician."⁹¹ Dilution and degradation are defensible descriptions of much musical transformation in film presentation, but they are also ideologically loaded terms, containing much of contempt and condescension.

In the *Grove* there are examples of a virtue being made out of what were perceived as film's inherent limitations. In The Gold Rush (1925) Charlie Chaplin is complimented for his musical "apotheosis of the trivial." As the tramp waits for the dance hall girls,

⁸⁹. Irving, 1954, 3: 93. Italics added.

⁹⁰. That burden being that music is not built for and should not have to carry narrative meaning.

⁹¹. Irving, 1954, 3: 94.

the shabby music (of the motion picture music guides) reinforces the shabby poetry of the scene. The use of the 'Star of Eve' from 'Tannhauser' is a case in point; no subtler tune could so intimately relate the little man's dreams to the banality of the world in which he lives.⁹²

The *Grove* writers suggest that the musical implications of the coming of sound are a simple extension of the old *kinotek* techniques: heavy handed correspondence, diegetic strum to justify the entrance of the orchestra, mickey mousing, vulgar leitmotif, excessive and inappropriate use of 19th century symphonic styles. The functions are simply illustrative, geographical, the conventions ensuring an absence of depth or poetry.

The discussion of processes used for recording sound ends with an expression of disapproval at the "very regrettable mutilation" which the cuts and additions of cinema practice impose on the music. The music is given over to the mixer, "who proceeds to dilute it with dialogue, commentary, train noises, bird noises, car noises, footsteps, door bangs and suchlike incidentals." In this rendering the music has rightful primacy, and it is in the superimposition of "incidentals," of the aural agents of clear signification which is after all the narrative film's generally received first responsibility, that music receives its greatest indignity.⁹³

Again, this discussion is contradictory. Music is sullied by the burden of signification in its silent period usage, and then when it is relieved from that burden, its new subservience is even more vigourously bemoaned. At heart are convictions about

⁹². Mellers, 1954, 3: 104.

⁹³. Irving, 1954, 3: 97. Alternatively such indignities can be seen as evidence of the film medium's maturing. George's guide (1912, 28-83) gives the approximate duration of complete musical selections, obviously assuming that the film musician would play them straight through. (See a similar view in Van Houten, 1992, 22, which suggests that audiences actually preferred this course.) Cinematically, or in relation to the standard prescriptions about film music, this practice was quickly condemned. However it would seem that musically, and in the music community, this respect is just what is longed for, even forty years later.

music's rightful preeminence, and lingering doubts about the possibility of film being art. Perhaps this accounts for some of the dismissal in the following quotation.

For composers the first and most important result of the invention of the sound-film was the tendency to use special music for each film. This began to provide a steady and rapidly increasing income for all composers capable of equipping themselves with the necessary technique. Three months in each year spent in writing film music leaves them nine months to write such symphonies, concertos and chamber music such as their artistic urge may dictate; music discarded from serious compositions can often be furbished up for use in films, its very flaws possibly rendering it more suitable for the less austere medium. It is seldom that the same music can make a success on the concert platform and in the kinema (sic). If it is good concert music it is essentially bad film music, and the converse is usually true. Nevertheless a good composer will write better music for even the crudest of dramatic scenes than a bad one, if only he possesses the necessary dramatic instinct.⁹⁴

Here is the dubious reputation referred to by Tony Thomas. This account provides for three months' film whoring which, as soul destroying as it may be, at least leaves leisure for the kind of composing that really counts, that which at least coincides with "artistic urge." The rest can be fobbed off on the films. It is interesting to note the depth of feeling in Irving's writing, a depth which in some ways replaces a detailed defense of his position. What are the "flaws" serious compositions are prone to, and why would they be more suitable for film? Why is it, what makes it a "less austere

⁹⁴. Ibid. "The truth is that no serious composer writes for the motion pictures for any other than money reasons..." Eisler, 1947, 55.

medium"? Why must good concert music be bad film music? Why the apparent supposition that film drama is likely to be "crude," and film composing as well?⁹⁵

Many attitudes inform the *Grove* film music entry. Irving's comments suggest that one of these is an adherence to the romantic ideology which exalts the artist and renders the work immutable. This marked high-low division underpins the above-quoted assumptions, and would also account for what seems an excessively critical tone. In connection Irving also demonstrates a (self conscious? self-justifying?) musical sophistication, and displeasure when composition is not rigorous, or formally correct (conventional). One of his great objections is that high art correctness is beyond the reach of film music's workaday realities.⁹⁶

What is accomplished, then? Irving suggests that film music is used only to excite and subliminally influence audiences. "Its appeal must be eighty percent subjective because it has to operate upon a large body of people of whom at least eighty percent are non-musical."⁹⁷ This last sentence is more polemical than scientific but clearly, between broad lines, it is saying that film presentations are not conducive to the rapt reception that music properly requires, nor the reverence its best composers have a right to.

This last inflection very clearly coincides with the auteurist impulses that were soon to overtake film culture. The account of the "good" composers' experiences in the cinematic wilderness resemble quite dramatically discussions concerning the great Hollywood directors who spent careers languishing in fields of philistine

⁹⁵. Donald Tovey, speaking in more charitable terms, points out that theatrical music (to which category we might add film music) often seems to fall short when taken out of theatrical context because it was conceived as part of a musical/narrative/visual ensemble. Since its effect comes in combination, it is not quite fair to criticize only part of the combination for producing a diminished effect. Tovey, 1937, IV, 29, 31, 44.

⁹⁶. With less strain, Wilfred Mellers also takes note of film composition's frequent formal *naïveté*. As with the leitmotif in film, Mellers points out that film composition is episodic, and can not properly be worked out (with developments and recapitulations) in the standard Sonata form. Mellers, 1954, 104.

⁹⁷. Irving, 1954, 3: 97.

incomprehension. This is the classical conception of the composer working in the studio era.⁹⁸

In connection, Hans Keller goes on to cite the case of British film in the 1940s and early 1950s. Its fortunate circumstance was to draw upon the enthusiastic contributions of generations of great composers for a wide range of films in a number of genres. Some of those enthusiasms are cited, and yet it also seems that there is some sad head-shaking. Film music defenders like John Huntley rejoice in the august participation of great composers. For his part Keller expresses regrets, suggesting in great measure that the Baxes, Blissés, Brittons, Benjamins, Waltons and Williams are squandering their talents in a medium unable to bear those talents up. "One cannot have a highly organized unity without having enough to unite."⁹⁹

Where merit is acknowledged--eg. Walton and his unusual success in using leitmotif in Olivier's Hamlet, tonal coherence in Bax's "Oliver Twist" music--it is likewise treated in auteurist fashion. "Even the best Hollywood composer would just automatically..."¹⁰⁰ Walton and Bax, of course, do more than this poor Hollywood construct could ever have imagined. Keller's understanding of these issues (author and institution) is quite nuanced, but his separation leads very directly to the language and attitude of the 1970s film music enthusiasts already discussed. There the great composers are sentimentally characterized, genius labouring in its figurative garret, hatching miracles while the unheeding hordes run munching to the exit signs.

This is not to say that talent and genius, or institutional insensitivities to them, are irrelevant. These validated composers are validated for good reason, and much of their

⁹⁸. For more on this refer back to my Chapter 1. In the Grove dictionary elaborate efforts are made to validate the work of the Hollywood auteurs and show solidarity within the ideologies of genius, without giving undue musical credit. "Chaplin produced another musically insignificant but highly intelligent score to 'Monsieur Verdoux.'" Mellers, 1954, 3: 108. Elsewhere (Keller, 1947, *Sight and Sound*, volume 16, number 61, 31) Keller advocates the prominent display of composers' names on marquees and in advertisements, to "invite praise and criticism."

⁹⁹. Keller, 1954, 3: 99.

film work is doubtless superior to the hack-produced run-of-the-mill. But it is true that notions, or even facts of talent and genius can distract us from real conditions and real affects. This same difficulty is present in the *Grove* account of American film music.

This account states that "perhaps the finest scores to complete film dramas yet composed are the work of", predictably, Aaron Copland. Referring to Of Mice and Men (1939), Mellers valorizes Copland's elaboration of Hans Eisler's advanced, musicologically informed film scoring theories. Ironically, the thing most acclaimed is a simple stinger, a dischord accompanying the moment when Lennie crushes Curly's hand.¹⁰¹ Of course this does not invalidate either Copland or Eisler, nor even the time honoured convention of stingers. It seems though that the qualities of Copland's film compositions are not at issue. The point is that the Grove's granting of exemplary status to Copland over, say, Korngold, relates as much to Copland's seriousness as a composer as to the qualities of his music.¹⁰²

A tone of condescension, or at least paternalism runs through the Grove entry on film music, together with a kind of resentment typical of (and at least partly justified in) the patronized. There is a mild allowing for the artistic possibilities of film mixed with the assurance that those possibilities will not likely come close to musical actualities.

The cinema is the one field where composers are regularly employed in considerable numbers, and where their music is regularly played if not listened to. However artistically frustrating the task of writing film music may sometimes seem, the honest composer cannot forget that the public which--however subconsciously or unconsciously--listens to his music

¹⁰⁰. Ibid., 3: 100.

¹⁰¹. Mellers, 1954, 3: 107.

¹⁰². It relates also to how quickly a reputation can change. Twenty years earlier, just before Korngold's remove to the US, his reputation would have far exceeded the still relatively obscure American composer.

may be immense, and that its musical and emotional health is to that extent in his hands.¹⁰³

Toward the end of his discussion Keller quotes Ralph Vaughn Williams, who advocates more integration of the various artistic functions--dialogue, design, direction, music--of film. Keller likewise looks forward to this day, but not too optimistically. He continues: "once the film stops calling itself an art and starts to become one, its makers will realize that instead of teaching the musician his business they might learn some of their own from him."¹⁰⁴

The 1954 *Grove* entry on film music is perceptive and, ultimately, unsympathetic. The next official take suggests at least a certain softening. Desmond Shawe-Taylor notes substantial improvement in the *New Grove* over its predecessor, for the simple fact that this time the contributors seem to consistently have sympathy for their subjects.¹⁰⁵ To some degree the 1980 film music entry in the *New Grove* reflects this attitude. For instance, there is an admission that film is a *bona fide* art form, and that though 19th century forms continue to characterize its music, that this music also has its own special characteristics and problems.

The article is as much adapted (by Christopher Palmer and John Gillett) as it is rewritten, though much of the previously dismissive language is softened. Still, auteurism, and a superior attitude prevails. "A real advance was made when such composers as Milhaud, Honegger and Shostakovich began to take an interest in the cinema."¹⁰⁶ In this there is certainly advance, or at least advantage, but much remains unstated. These composers became involved with film as young men, before they were who they were, so to speak. Therefore the impression given of great masters coming to

¹⁰³. Mellers, 1954, 3: 109.

¹⁰⁴. Keller, 1954, 3: 103.

¹⁰⁵. Shawe-Taylor, 219.

¹⁰⁶. Palmer, 1980, 6: 549.

the infant medium's aid is not accurate. More importantly, emerging from under the influence of Satie/Cocteau, and from the Soviet Revolution which exalted the despised-by-the-bourgeois forms like film, such composers' film activities would have come out of a sensibility very distinct than the one informing the New Grove account.¹⁰⁷

Similar to the 1954 edition, the writers go on to track improvements in film scoring through and because of the activities of the usual celebrated suspects: Prokofiev, Shostakovich, Kabalevsky, Milhaud, Auric, Honegger, Maurice Jaubert, Britten, Bliss, Alwyn, Benjamin, Walton, Eisler, Korngold, Antheil.¹⁰⁸ Again, this is true enough. But it does not necessarily follow that, because there are masters, the masterpiece tradition that most enshrines them is always and only the best explanation.

The section most pertinent to the present discussion, and which in some way summarizes the attitude of much of the academic music community toward the movies, concerns the functional use of concert music in film. According to the 1980 article there are three ways that it is done: illustrations of concert music in pictorial terms (Jean Mitry, Fantasia); uses by filmmakers "not primarily interested in the music" (as in Delius' "Appalachia"--and Mendelssohn's "Midsummer" overture--clipped by Herbert Stothart for The Yearling, Tiomkin's borrowing of "The Merry Widow Waltz" in Shadow of a Doubt). Finally there is a more dire kind of appropriation. "There was no...extra-musical justification for David Lean's interpolation of Rakhmaninov's (sic) Second Piano Concerto throughout his film of Noel Coward's Brief Encounter, and the use of existing music in such a context may be found distracting or even offensive."¹⁰⁹ This remarkably cranky expression quite willfully ignores a great deal of vigorous critical comment on this particular film, evidently to affirm, after all the attempts at understanding and fair consideration, exclusivity and snobbery.

¹⁰⁷. On French influences see Thomson, 1966, 52-61. For the Soviets, see my chapter three.

¹⁰⁸. See also Sternfeld, 1960.

¹⁰⁹. Palmer, 1980, 6: 552-3.

Who, then, are these elitist film music haters? As we will see, the situation is not so easily reduced; elitism is only part of a complex cluster of attitudes and motivations behind musical suspicion of film. As such, it is obviously important to respond to the biases of the 1954 edition not as absolute expressions to adopt or reject (as for instance film composers and their defenders have been wont to do), but as statements inflected by setting and context.¹¹⁰

Sentiments expressed in the Grove dictionaries are not necessarily untrue: music has, historically, been subservient, and it has often been substandard. Romanticism in film music, and clear-eyed observation as well may imply the effacement of individual expression within repressive capitalist economies. But it is also highly romantic, and inaccurate to suggest that effacement eliminates meaning or its expression. Subconscious signification is signification nevertheless. The fact remains that what in evaluative economies (the predominant reduction of films to either good or bad status) is mediocre should still be subject to consideration that is more than just dismissive.

Film Music Criticism: Underlying Sentiments

Similarly, these same critical evaluations should be interrogated, as validations and condemnations both are illuminated by the conditions and ideologies that gave them rise. We will now look more closely at music community dismissals of film music, and particularly of the use in films of the classics. There are various voices and motivations, all opening up larger issues than we might at first see.

One of the writers of the 1954 Grove film music entry, Hans Keller, criticized film music for *Music Review* from 1948 to 1959.¹¹¹ The apparent hostility found in

¹¹⁰ . “(I)t would be idle to pretend that *Grove* was being prepared for use in a musicological vacuum.” Sadie, 1975, 262.

¹¹¹ . The other writers' biographies are of interest as well, particularly as they suggest some of the ways that specific criticism relates to larger critical communities. Ernest Irving was the musical director at Ealing Studios from 1935 to his death in 1953. Before that, between 1900 and 1940 he was an active London theatre conductor, also giving

Keller's *Grove* entry can also be found in his *Music Review* writing. He states unequivocally "that Hollywood music in and beyond Hollywood is the most powerful force unmusicality has ever commanded must be a truism to every musical mind."¹¹² He is skeptical about and often dismissive of original film composition, and these attitudes are a result of a great and demanding musicological sophistication.

Keller describes a belaboured film attempt at modern music as "a pastiche with wrong notes duly injected."¹¹³ He notes that Leith Stevens' *Piano Concerto in C min.*, composed for the film *Night Song* (1947), "is no piano concerto and ends in F min." He finally and wrathfully declares it "nine minutes of stinking refuse." He finds that another sub-par effort "makes one dream of America's first great thriller, *Scarface* (1932), wherein there was no background music at all."¹¹⁴

As with observers of early film who came from outside the discipline¹¹⁵, Keller often seems reluctant to afford film full artistic status. "(There) is no legitimate inartistic

seasons of light opera on the continent. Clearly he had an investment in, and evidently an affection for popular musical expression, especially as it related to popular musical forms. It is also possible that as a popular musician/composer, he felt somewhat self-conscious in august Grovian company. Irving is the most dismissive of the three 1954 writers, and his attitude is similar to the sense of pugnacious inferiority often found in film musician discourse. On Irving see Sadie, ed., 1980, 9: 329.

Wilfred Mellers' writing has none of this protesting-too-much, and he is not an academic absolutist. He has always been interested in music's social background, as evidenced by his first book, *Music and society* (1946). His 1965 work, *Harmonious meeting* (London, D. Dobson), sympathetically investigated the relationship between music, poetry and drama in the English baroque, and the music degree course he started at York University in 1964 pioneered the application of extra-musical factors (social and historical determinants) to musical study. His book *The twilight of the gods* (1973, New York, Viking) is a delightful musicological analysis and fan letter to the Beatles and their at once (unconsciously) sophisticated and fully accessible music. His editing of the series "Music and Society," (see Russell, 1987) bespeaks his continued interest in and commitment to the study of music in its context. I will return to Mellers later (see also Sadie, ed., 1980, 12: 108-10).

¹¹². Keller, 1951 (*Music Review*, XII), 324.

¹¹³. Keller, 1950 (M.R., XI), 145.

¹¹⁴. Keller, 1949 (M.R., X), 50-1.

¹¹⁵. ie. Rudolf Arnheim and Erwin Panofsky. Both critics are in some ways sympathetic to film, but their tone can also be condescending. Arnheim, 1957, *Film as art*, Berkeley, University of California; Panofsky, 1934, "Style and medium in the motion pictures," in *Film theory and criticism*, ed. Gerald Mast, Marshal Cohen and Leo Braudy, 4th edition, New York, Oxford, 233-48.

music, which is why naturalism, the art of remaining inartistic but expressive, will always be able to say more, rather than less, without music."¹¹⁶ He damns with faint praise, talking in one case of "one of the least rotten American scores." Conversely, as commentators from the start of film had done, he valorizes the participations of real composers. Praising new composition in William Walton's "Hamlet" score he notes that "even the best Hollywood composer would just automatically have re-used the music."¹¹⁷

This dismissal of Hollywood film scoring may relate to one of its central tenets. Keller disagrees with Kurt London's oft-quoted maxim about film music being bad when one can hear it. "Any so-called artistic process or device that has to shun the light of consciousness is suspect in the extreme."¹¹⁸ He disagrees with the handmaiden model, finding that when the score merely reinforces the images that musical tautology results.

But although he is critical of original composition and wants the music to be heard, Keller's greatest ire is reserved for the kind of music we are partly discussing in this study, the kind of music that, even in film, comes to the foreground. Keller decries especially "the notorious strategem of hiding behind music from the concert hall, as if a picture had ever been uplifted by the music it degrades."¹¹⁹ He observes how Lionel Newman "murdered" Mozart's Clarinet Quintet in the film Apartment for Peggy (1948) by, among other things, taking out the clarinet.¹²⁰ He laments Franz Waxman's "protracted and multiple murder" of Smetana's *Vltava* in Man on a Tightrope (1953).¹²¹

Keller finds that musical quotation often emerges as a "covert expression of simultaneous love and hate towards a parent figure--the quoted composer." This applies not only to individual instances, but to the whole practice, and what it says about film's

¹¹⁶. Keller, 1956 (M.R., XVI), 255.

¹¹⁷. Keller, 1948 (M.R., IX), 197.

¹¹⁸. Keller, 1951 (M.R., XII), 315.

¹¹⁹. Keller, 1949 (M.R., X), 225.

¹²⁰. Keller, 1951 (M.R., XII), 223. See also Adorno on arrangement (1991, 36).

¹²¹. Keller, 1953 (M.R. XIV), 311-12.

relationship with the parent arts. For Keller quotation is a powerful evidence of film's perpetual adolescence.

(A)s in literature a quotation serves to authorise a wrong statement, so a musical quotation may answer the quoter's need for parental approbation; he feels that by thus honouring, and identifying himself with, daddy's holy words, he sanctifies his own. A rose thrown into a midden, however, does not improve the latter's smell, but rather starts to stink itself.¹²²

For all the strong language, Keller was aware that film music need not be a force of unmusicality. He acknowledges how film has been uniformly successful in smuggling twelve-tonality into public consciousness.¹²³ On "The Function of Feature Music" Keller states that "as long as... 'good music'...is not used for any extraneous and unmusical purpose, or re-scored and 'arranged' or 'varied' by a composer in search of atmosphere, there is definite if limited scope for the filming of unfilmic (previously composed) music."¹²⁴

But Keller is not just echoing the intransigent attitude manifest in the previously cited UNESCO catalogue. He is interested in more than how film can further musical ends. Although at times his writing betrays a conflict in his own mind, Keller's best instincts seem to speak for a reconciliation of film and music communities, for the possibility of each edifying the other. Such would mean that "(t)he narrow minded musician would have his eyes opened, the narrow minded film-goer his ears."¹²⁵

¹²². Keller, 1949, 25, 26. See Keller 1946-7 (*Sight and Sound*, volume 15, number 60, 136) on the related evils of pastiche.

¹²³. Keller, 1951 (M.R., XII), 147-49.

¹²⁴. Keller, 1953, (M.R., XIV), 311-12.

¹²⁵. Keller, 1952 (M.R., XIII), see 209-211. As with many other issues here considered, the desirability and difficulty of such compromise is not unique to film. Franz Liszt discussed the challenge posed by programme music to both professional musicians and men of letters. "Both parties set themselves against it with the same vigor, with the same

Keller is not just a hostile critic, but a demanding would-be enjoyer of films and film music, if on his own specifically musical terms. Those terms include, as we have seen, a pretty complete intolerance for musical quotation. There is more to this sentiment, though, and to Keller's film music writing in general than education, expression and enjoyment, and a jealous regard for classical music's rightful territory.

As with many of his critical contemporaries with similar backgrounds, Keller is motivated by more weighty matters. He quotes Antony Hopkins on the subject of underqualified film composers. "Who are these people, whose names never seem to appear on any concert programmes? What else have they written; what pages have they placed on the altar of Art, rather than on the lap of mammon?"¹²⁶

Elitists, or even just art lovers, have always been concerned about philistine besmirchment of art's altars. But serving Mammon, sacrificing principle to material expediencies, can have more portentous ramifications. Hanns Eisler and Theodor Adorno describe these in their discussion of modern culture, as transformed into modern cultural industry.

Taste and receptivity have become largely standardized; and, despite the multiplicity of products, the consumer has only apparent freedom of choice. Production has been divided into administrative fields, and whatever passes through the machinery bears its mark, is predigested, neutralized, leveled down...All art, as a means of filling out leisure time, has become entertainment...¹²⁷

obstinacy. The latter, looking askance, see their property being taken over into a sphere where, apart from the value *they* placed on it, it acquires new significance; the former are horrified at a violation of their territory by elements with which they do not know how to deal." Liszt, 1855, 130. For more on programme music, see my fourth chapter.

¹²⁶. Keller, 1951 (M.R. XII), 224.

¹²⁷. Eisler, 1947, ix-x. Also 53, 82.

Mass art diminishes the art object and dehumanizes those who contemplate it. During and after the Nazi period (ie., the time of the 1954 *Grove* entry), these issues assume special weight. In the age of mechanical reproduction fascism's massive social formulations had led to unprecedented holocaust. In this light apparent elitism could seem the last defense against disaster.¹²⁸

The dire effects of the culture industry are a central preoccupation of Theodor Adorno's writing, and this preoccupation overwhelmingly informs Eisler and Adorno's book Composing for the Films. We have discussed musicology's customary insularity. Adorno is an important exception to this tendency. His musicology was inseparable from his sociology.¹²⁹ Adorno's most celebrated explication of the modern conditions of music in a social context is found in the 1938 article, "On the Fetish Character in Music and the Regression of Hearing."¹³⁰

In this article Adorno discusses the modern musical tendency of fragmented listening, whereby conspicuously recognizable (beautiful, famous) parts of larger works are keyed upon at the expense of the whole. In this way a fetishizing replaces real engagement and pleasure with the work's actual dimensions and implications. Of course much more than music appreciation is at stake.

Musically the "isolated moments of enjoyment prove incompatible with the immanent constitution of the work of art, and whatever in the work goes beyond them to an essential perception is sacrificed to them." What this portends is that compositions become "culinary delights which seek to be consumed immediately for their own sake, as

¹²⁸. See Walter Benjamin's 1935 article, "The work of art in the age of mechanical reproduction." Anthologized in Mast and Cohen, ed., 1985, Film Theory and Criticism, New York and Oxford, Oxford University Press, 675-694.

¹²⁹. This is attributable to the fact that, with his really remarkable range of reference, Adorno was much more than a musicologist. See Adorno, 1991, author's preface in Adorno, 1973, xi-xv, and particularly his 1967 collection, Prisms (trans. Samuel and Sherry Weber, Cambridge, Mass., MIT Press).

¹³⁰. In Adorno, 1991, 26-52.

if in art the sensory were not the bearer of something intellectual which only shows itself in the whole rather than in isolated topical moments."¹³¹

So we have a loss of thought, action, freedom. This mode of listening reflects a mode of living, or rather not living. "The romanticizing of particulars eats away the body of the whole," and thus modern musical culture creates a general malaise of regression and misrecognition.¹³² The triumph of the culture industry is that this social misrecognition is masked by mere brand name recognition. The regressive state and its concomitant fragmentations become legal tender, and use gives way to exchange value.

The feelings which go to the exchange value create the appearance of immediacy at the same time as the absence of a relation to the object belies it...If the moments of sensual pleasure in the idea, the voice, the instrument are made into fetishes and torn away from any functions which could give them meaning, they meet a response equally isolated, equally far from the meaning of the whole, and equally determined by success in the blind and irrational emotions which form the relationship to music into which those with no relationship enter.¹³³

The cultural inoculation, the "vulgarization and enchantment"¹³⁴ that Adorno outlines in this piece is seen as a general condition and a dire danger. It appears in numerous settings, like in film music. Given this context, strong words of criticism and disapproval suddenly appear as much more than cranky proprietary complaints about incorrect appropriation of the leitmotif.

¹³¹. Ibid., 29.

¹³². Ibid, 36, 41-49.

¹³³. Ibid., 34-5, 33.

¹³⁴. Ibid., 36.

Concerns like these are essential to understanding this period, its critics and the tone of its criticism (Adorno, Benjamin, Horkheimer, Keller, etc.). I do not wish to propose facile equivalencies. These critics do not constitute a homogeneous group. But they do hold some things to be self evident. Defenses are needed against the dangers of the popular.

And what was the supreme popular (sub) art? The movies, of course. Film for these critics is not considered just for itself, but as an emblem. Eisler and Adorno point out that

(m)usic is supposed to bring out the spontaneous, essentially human element in its listeners and in virtually all human relations. As the abstract art *par excellence*, and as the art farthest removed from the world of practical things, it is predestined to perform this function.

Film's reduction of music to purely functional levels, as discussed in the Grove dictionary's entry on film music and in Eisler and Adorno's book, not only blocks that destiny, but in so doing it blights human relations.¹³⁵

In all these statements the underlying stakes are extraordinarily high. Thus, for instance, Keller's hyperbolically critical review of the score, by Daniele Amfitheatrof, for Max Ophul's Letter from an Unknown Woman (1949), which he finds it to be "utterly depraved, as well as stupid."¹³⁶ Once again Keller, naturalized British, but a Jewish

¹³⁵. Eisler, 1947, 20. Film music is a classic example of what Adorno and Horkheimer criticize in their Dialectic of enlightenment (1969). Use value had given way universally to exchange value, where "the intrinsic value of things (was displaced) for the sake of ends (capital accumulation) extrinsic to them." Introduction in Adorno, 1991, 3-10.

¹³⁶. Keller, 1952 (M.R., XIII), 55-6; this is an unusually long and pointed blast. Donald Tovey, who saw himself as an educator and looked for ways to make music accessible and more universally enjoyable (though he did not suffer besmirchment either) provides an important alternative to Keller's severity. See, for instance, Tovey's view of adaptation in his reading of Liszt's arrangement of Schubert's *Wanderer Fantasy* for piano and orchestra. Tovey, 1937, IV, 70-73.

Austrian refugee from Hitler, is not merely being elitist in his displeasure. As with Adorno (another refugee), he finds such encroachments to be emblematic of a general cultural disaster.

Keller criticizes Karajan's 80 minute version of the Matthew Passion, which juxtaposed paintings of Christ's life with Bach's music:

(A) devitalized culture which has ceased to understand its own creations tends to explain one art in terms of another; hence the popularity of...Disney's Fantasia... and [the filmed] St. Matthew's Passion. To juxtapose self-contained works of art is to establish a meaningless relation between what is meaning-full-up, in a vain attempt to recover the lost meaning, 'new and unsuspecting beauties.' 'Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image...' ¹³⁷

This is Adorno's fetishism *in exelcis*. Film quotation of previously composed music infantilizes the listener and gives the power of selection and dissemination to the "publishers, sound film magnates and rulers of radio," and other such totalitarians.¹³⁸

So, severity. Much music theory of this time as well as in the present, was concerned with the problems of composing modern music. Observers were concerned with currency, against the perceived reactionary back-peddling of film music practice. In a pre-Cage world, this meant a kind of musical self-containment, a fortress defended by severity and inaccessible compositional complexity.¹³⁹

¹³⁷. Keller, 1954 (M.R. XV), 141. In its initial release, and for many years afterward, Fantasia was not actually a financial success.

¹³⁸. Adorno, 1991, 46, 31.

¹³⁹. At this time Schoenberg's influence was still very substantial, and figures like Babbitt, Boulez and Stockhausen were poised to continue that extremely specialized level of discourse.

Keller was a systematic analyst, a close textual reader put off by the besmirchments of the extra-musical. For him musical meaning was thematic, or rather, motivic, contained within the composition, and in purely musical relations. For him and for the tradition he represented, film music's signficatory functions, not to mention the additive meaning of familiar compositions, were suspect.¹⁴⁰

These are also the reasons that Adorno so fiercely defended the absolute, and, among other things, criticized film music. He had seen music culture and its modern *accoutrements* (sound recordings, technology as taken over by culture) raising ephemera (a three minute single) above the great longer forms that they could not properly render and distribute.

Thus it was that the concert hall--since the courts and cottages, the musical cultures and political economies that created the music in the first place no longer existed--not only presented music as it was intended, it also insulated it from the vulgarizations of middle class culture and the culture industry.¹⁴¹

Before John Cage and Karlheinz Stockhausen, classical ideology was based on liveness. Recordings were documents of real performers, really performing (which is where Glenn Gould's flight from the stage could be seen as constituting a betrayal). This is why *Grove* film music contributor Wilfred Mellers admired the egalitarian and participatory nature of early English music; from that plainsong unity even the concert hall is a great fall. But the concert hall at least preserves some the conditions of and regard for things lost. Film, as the most literally canned of all the arts, was in this formulation irredeemable. And film music, bound up in technology and the workaday, is the apostacy embodied.

¹⁴⁰. In fact, Keller went on to develop a non-verbal system of analysis, and then gave up writing about music altogether. Kerman, 1985, 73, 76-8.

¹⁴¹. Adorno was wary of the concert hall too; Schoenberg was his ideal modern composer, precisely because of his musical intractability, and the discomforts he caused the bourgeois concert-goer. Ultimately his pessimism was fairly terminal. "Between incomprehensibility and inescapability, there is no third way." Adorno, 1991, 31; also

To summarize, then, there is more than elitism at the root of musical criticism of film music practice. In terms of film uses of classical music, cavalier cutting and careless quotation are mere symptoms of a more general *malaise*.

The musical critics I have discussed are informed, articulate, convincing, and they privilege what are for them purer universal narratives in music, or foreground its most pressing threats. This accounts for what sometimes seems to be a stubborn anti-film attitude. The medium, in its commercial manifestations, masks with it disastrous individualism the mere vulgar search for lucre that runs it.¹⁴²

Music critics who criticize film music, then, use film as a plank in a larger platform. Especially taken in this context their arguments were and remain effective, valuable, even largely valid. But, they are not the only possible perspectives. The following two chapters will focus on other areas where classical music traditions have special applications in modern film, and particularly film music practice.

38-9, on how the concert hall was not necessarily ideal.

¹⁴². See Mellers, 1946, chapter 4, especially note 24.

BLANK IN ORIGINAL

CHAPTER 3

SOUND MONTAGE AND COUNTERPOINT ANALOGIES

In the last chapter we saw how music critics have dismissed film music for a number of reasons that are not necessarily completely musical. The strict isolationism of Hans Keller and Theodor Adorno goes beyond mere musicological fussiness. Elitism in the face of dire modern reality is a response to and a defense against that reality. It is also in many ways a refusal of that reality.

This means that these critics, to a degree, are also refusing film itself. Fragmentation (as in, for instance, musical quotation) is not only the burden of modernism, but it is the material fact of the cinema. The unwillingness to consider the viability of basic film properties is where Adorno and Keller, and in part the musical community, fall short in their criticism of film music. For a more complete picture we need, in addition to their valuable views, a perspective more accepting of and conversant with that fragmentation.

This chapter will deal with the film tradition--in broad terms, Soviet montage--that most articulately expressed and passionately pursued this idea. In doing so it will present an alternative to Adorno's terminal judgments concerning art and culture. In addition to representing that alternative, this chapter and the one that follows will also introduce the second of three ways that serious music interacts with film and film culture.

The first way was illustrated in the first two chapters of this study, where we saw direct theoretical and critical responses to film music, and classical music's place in film music. The second way is more problematic, and it has in some ways been the most theoretically influential. Classical music discourse has also related to film practice and theory *by analogy*. This means that instead of discussing specific instances of film/music interaction, artists and theorists have elaborated ways that film is *like* music.

The most famous film/musical analogy is the Soviet notion of contrapuntal sound. The standard explanation of counterpoint in the sound film is that it built upon silent Soviet montage cinema, which elaborated formal strategies by which bourgeois social constructs were criticized, and revolutionary alternatives presented. In this account film sound counterpoint functioned as an aural variant of Sergei Eisenstein's intellectual montage, so that disjunctions between picture and sound tracks led to uncovered apparatus and empowering new conceptual syntheses.

This formulation posits polar opposites, criticizing bourgeois parallelisms as it favours revolutionary oppositions. It also privileges intellectual meaning over emotional affect. I will argue that these perpendicular geometries are not adequate to the complexities of film/sound, and especially to the film/music relationship. This inadequacy is partly due to the appropriation of the musical term "counterpoint." I will hope to demonstrate that there have been two uses of "counterpoint" in film. The first one relates to counterpoint's *musical* properties, but does not address issues of meaning. This use has received much less attention than the more dominant oppositional one, which is figurative, an analogy, and not very musical.

I will briefly discuss what I feel to be an important alternative that lies between these two: counterpoint as an analogy which partakes of *musical* sensibilities. By including Eisenstein's concepts of tonal and overtone montage, as well as discussing the phenomenon of programme music in the chapter which follows, I will suggest a way past the simplistic modernist dualisms and crude materialist dialectic that have prevailed, and which to some degree continue in film music theory. I hope to find a more complex and satisfying alternative to familiar and too frequent oversimplifications.

In this way, through revising and replacing the dominant similes of classical music, I will come to an effective way to deal with the third way that serious (classical) music has interacted with film and film culture. This way is in the actual uses of the music in films. The last chapters will demonstrate ways that direct music and film

criticism, as well as complicating but enriching film/music analogies, help us to understand and enjoy this underconsidered part of film music practice.

The Two Avant Gardes

If Theodor Adorno represents one pole of modernist thought, advocating as well its corresponding artistic strategy, then the Soviet film artists are at the other end. The way that Peter Wollen characterizes these two alternatives in his influential essay "The Two Avant Gardes" is useful to this discussion. In this essay Wollen suggests that avant garde art in the twentieth century split into two streams: the aesthetic, and the political. Their ways and means were dramatically different: where one sought to remove itself from objectionable realities, the other moved to change that reality.¹⁴³

Although Wollen states that the aesthetic avant garde was derived from earlier experiments in painting, I wish to carefully place modern music, in the sense that Adorno uses the term¹⁴⁴, in the same category. "(T)he suppression of the signified altogether, an art of pure signifiers detached from meaning as much as from reference" seems to me to describe the Schoenbergian severity that Adorno defends as much as it does the visual abstractions to which Wollen refers.¹⁴⁵

Unlike its counterpart, the political wing of the avant garde was most concerned with content and its application in a social sphere. All formal experimentation was to be in the service of progressive social ends. Instead of the strategic inaccessibility of the aesthetes, the political artist's aim was to communicate, and even proselytize. The artist's social role was very distinct as well. The heroic high modernist and the prophet crying in

¹⁴³. In Wollen, 1982. For discussion of "avant garde" vs. "classical" art see Burger, 1984, 70.

¹⁴⁴. cf. Adorno, 1973.

¹⁴⁵. Wollen, 1982, 95.

the wilderness were replaced, for instance, by the Soviet worker-artist, un-alienated, valuable and valued, in happy and productive service to the revolution.¹⁴⁶

It is clear how serious music can coincide with Wollen's aesthetic avant garde, but what of the political wing? In many ways Hanns Eisler's Composing for the Films is the key film/musical expression of this perspective. Eisler's collaborations with Bertolt Brecht (more on Brecht below) confirm his interest and activity in the area of musico/political engagement, and indeed some of his oppositional suggestions for film music¹⁴⁷ coincide very directly with Soviet theory. But the book also deals very much with decried film music realities, as well as reflecting some of the isolation and pessimism of co-writer Adorno. In this book, and in general it is a conflicted combination of the two avant gardes that obscures some of the possibilities, as well as the problems of the political side.¹⁴⁸

For a more clearly defined example I wish now to concentrate on Soviet film. What does Soviet revolutionary cinema have to do with music culture? As suggested, and as I will go on to demonstrate, one key connection is through the film/sound counterpoint analogy. But analogies can be uncomfortably abstract. Before discussing them I wish to briefly and concretely sketch a similar and significant artistic and social development pertaining to music. This expression of the political avant garde helps put metaphorical contrapuntal elaborations on firmer historical and theoretical ground.

Adorno himself suggests a link to a political musical practice. In Dialectic of Enlightenment (1944) Adorno and Horkheimer discuss the "detail" in high art. A detail is some formal element--a post-impressionist brush stroke or fauvist use of colour,

¹⁴⁶. On the cinema worker see Petric, Vladimir, 1987, Constructivism in film: The Man With the Movie Camera: a cinematic analysis, New York, Cambridge University Press.

¹⁴⁷. See Eisler, 1947, 23-27 for examples.

¹⁴⁸. I see these conflicts not so much as weaknesses as signs of the humanity and sincere grappling behind the work. My emphasis on Soviet theory here is intended to more clearly delineate terms and possibilities, and also to suggest how clear delineations, in this and other cases, have sometimes obscured and complicated both the application and the understanding of theory.

musical dissonance, etc.--which leaps out from and disturbs the harmony of the unified artwork. The result of this disturbance is the unmasking of the illusory workings of the culture industry.¹⁴⁹

I have shown in my first chapter and the first section of the second how discreetness and the illusion of unity were at the core of commercial film music's perceived mandate. These are some of the things most objected to by music critics, who have been seen to favour the aesthetic side of Wollen's avant garde. Extremely important in this regard is a contemporaneous musical movement which advocates the *political* use of the disturbing detail. In doing so it contradicts substantially the perceived irrelevancies of romanticism and the effaced domesticity of film music, not to mention the severities of a Schoenbergian avant garde.

In his introduction to The Rise and Fall of the City of Mahagonny, Bertolt Brecht discussed the now deadening effects of Wagnerian opera and, by extension, of conventional dramatic theatre.

So long as the expression '*Gesamtkunstwerk*' ...means that the integration is a muddle, so long as the arts are supposed to be "fused" together, the various elements will all be equally degraded, and each will act as a mere "feed" to the rest. The process of fusion extends to the spectator, who gets thrown into the melting pot too and becomes a passive (suffering) part of the total work of art. Witchcraft of this sort must of course be fought against. Whatever is intended to produce hypnosis, is likely to induce sordid intoxication, or creates fog, has got to be given up.¹⁵⁰

¹⁴⁹. In Adorno, 1972, 125-6. Characteristically, Horkheimer and Adorno find that the detail, "a vehicle of protest against the organization" which operated from Romanticism through Expressionism, can no longer function under the totality of the culture industry.

¹⁵⁰. Brecht, 1964, 37-8; 1976, 281-2. See Adorno, 1972, 124 for Adorno and

Clearly this criticism could also apply to the integration of *film* elements already discussed. Brecht's collaborator Kurt Weill had advocated a different place for music in the theatrical equation. Against illusion and the stupor described above, Weill spoke for the "gest," the idea that music must have a point, of which the audience must be conscious.¹⁵¹ To accomplish this awareness Brecht posited a "radical separation of the elements."

The set (works) as images rather than illusion, the story (becomes) less of an experience and (gives) room for meditation, the music (comes) not 'out of the air' but out of the wings and (remains) like a concert piece.

Writing, music and architecture (play) their part as independent arts in an intelligible performance.¹⁵²

Each constituent element, each "detail" was to be visible, audible, noticeable. Musically this meant leaving "dramatic opera" for "epic opera," music that "dishes up" for music that communicates, "music which heightens the text" for music which "sets forth the text," music which merely illustrates for music "which takes up a position."¹⁵³

All of this dramatically contradicts the received imperatives of film music: unheard melodies, subliminal heightening, smooth integration, cinematic leitmotif. For the artist/composer, Brecht's ideas demanded that confrontation replace hypnotic tale

Horkheimer's dire characterization of modern artistic integration in television.

¹⁵¹. Brecht, 1976, xxix.

¹⁵². Ibid., xxx.

¹⁵³. Brecht, 1964, 38. The most famous part of this essay, later anthologized as "The Modern Theatre is the Epic Theatre," is the grid placing conventional "dramatic theatre" against the new "epic theatre." In this grid numerous elements of narrative theatre were similarly opposed to reveal their old dramatic and new epic functions. For a strictly musical demonstration of disturbing detail consider the work of *Les Six*, including their incorporation, as in a collage, of popular idioms, pastiches and quotations in their compositions. A number of this circle (Auric, Milhaud, Honegger) went on to compose for films. Thomson, 1966, 52-72; Brown, 1988, 174.

spinning. And the confrontation was to be ideological as well, meaning that for artist and viewer both, passivity was to give way to activity and action.¹⁵⁴

Brecht and Weill's ideas, as well as the works in which they applied them, caused a revolution in the theatre and were felt generally in the arts. Their similarities to the general aims of Soviet cinema are especially striking. In either instance, formal details were to stand out, and all to progressive ends. Music of course, was one of these details.

The music critics discussed in the last chapter were responding to the Hollywood romanticism that rejected and then obscured these modernist possibilities. Likewise Brecht and the Soviet filmmaker/theorists were reacting to integrated illusionistic traditions in their own media, and in their own time.¹⁵⁵ Before elaborating on their reactions I will take a brief look at the classical cinematic integrations that the Soviet version of Brechtian modernism opposed. Its musical manifestations are especially telling, and will be returned to when I discuss the actual interpretation of classical music in film.

Parallelism

Brecht suggested that modern integration of the arts was a form of hypnotic, intoxicating witchcraft. The following are some of the recipes for spells cast by film music. Irene Atkins suggests that the key film-musical questions are as follows. "'Why is the...music necessary to the scene?' or, if the music is not really necessary, 'Does its

¹⁵⁴. "Of course such innovations also demand a new attitude on the part of the audiences who frequent opera houses." Ibid., 39. Dziga Vertov, preceding the better-known Brecht, articulately represents the cinematic applications of many of these ideas. See, Vertov, 1984, Kino-Eye: the writings of Dziga Vertov, ed. Annette Michelson, Berkeley and Los Angeles, University of California.

¹⁵⁵. As suggested in my first chapter, film music has only recently taken up some of these issues again. See, for instance, Brown's writerly prescriptions (1994, 1, 22) against Thomas' traditionally integrated suggestions (1973, 16). Generations of film musical romanticism (which I do not wish to reject uncategorically) combined to obscure the points so well made some seventy years ago.

inclusion still add something dramatically and emotionally?"¹⁵⁶ Atkins' supposition is that music will or should "add somehow dramatically and emotionally." The implication is that adding means uniting, eliminating any rogue elements that might unduly distract from or open up the film.¹⁵⁷ These ideas are emblematic of musical parallelism, of polite and obedient musical accompaniment of visual stimuli. Modernism questioned the necessity of this correspondence, in part because it questioned the arbitrary and constraining suppositions that often lay beneath it. Silent music practice is full of these suppositions.

Edith Lang and George West's seminal 1920 primer, Musical Accompaniment of Motion Pictures features the following illustration.

There are certain keys such as A flat and E flat which suggest 'warmth' or languor, such as B flat minor or G minor which fit a mood of sorrow and grief, such as A or D major which lend themselves to brilliancy, such as E major which suggests 'clear skies' or the ocean's wide expanse.'...The key of C has nothing to commend it...¹⁵⁸

With similar arbitrariness Lang and West link certain tone colours (organ stops) to specific meanings: suspicion, clarinet solo with string accompaniment; entreaty, saxophone solo with string 8' and flute 8' accompaniment; temptation, clarinet or oboe with string accompaniment; defiance, reeds *mf*; treachery, reeds *mf*; torture, reeds *f*.¹⁵⁹

It is unclear why all this should be so, beyond maybe convention and our susceptibility to the power of suggestion. Whatever the source, we see here a confidence

¹⁵⁶. Atkins, 1983, 21. The ellided word is "source."

¹⁵⁷. "(F)ilm music did not become film music until the music began to coordinate with the action." Brown, 1988, 169.

¹⁵⁸. Lang/West, 1920, 13.

¹⁵⁹. Ibid., 54.

in inevitable, inherent musical meaning. That confidence in musical matters extended to the films themselves, to their messages and to the way audiences responded to them.

In the introduction to his influential film music collection Motion Picture Moods for Pianists and Organists (1924), Erno Rapée makes the following proposition.

One third of all film footage is used to depict action; another third will show no physical action, but will have, as a preponderance, psychologic situations; the remaining third will neither show action nor suggest psychological situations, but will restrict itself to showing or creating atmosphere or scenery.¹⁶⁰

Throughout this publication Rapée's "moods" and "situations" are consistent with this schematic rendering of film narrative, and are suggestive of music's functioning in the support thereof. These categories (action, psychology, atmosphere) are seen as discrete, inherently separate, non-intersecting. Meaning in film is assumed to be unambiguous and readily comprehensible. And whatever the sense of the screen action, whatever the emotional currents, there is music available that is adequate to its representation.

Rapée's model is representative of most contemporary views of film music. The early lexicons all served to shore up the narrative with musical reinforcements. The underpinning principle is that the image is primary, the music is secondary, and to accompany is to strive for correspondence and congruity. The nature of that congruity fascinates, and demands further interrogation. In addition to the arbitrariness of abstract keys and colours silent film music also depended on a rather more concrete musical inevitability.

¹⁶⁰. Rapée, 1924, iii.

This was a host of remarkably literal-minded musical selections, the motivation for which were generally referential and associative. Rapée, who was an influential compiler of music for silent film, suggests to accompanists that "for (films with) prominent people in Indiana use 'On the Banks of the Wabash'," (a footnote points out that it also serves for natives of Illinois) "for the Mayor of New York--'The Sidewalks of New York' and for California personages--'California, Here I Come.'"¹⁶¹

Popular songs were not the only ones used in this way. Charles D. Isaacson, an early film musician, recommended a wide knowledge of the classical repertoire, and of programme music in particular, as its inherent/associative illustrative qualities were ideally suited for interaction with image and narrative.¹⁶²

The disadvantages of what was often excessive parallelism were emphasized by Siegfried Kracauer.

(S)cores arranged from melodies with fixed meanings are apt to produce a blinding effect. There are popular tunes which we traditionally associate with...real-life events whenever these tunes, which long since have become clichés, are synchronized with corresponding images, they automatically call forth stereotyped reactions to them. A few bars of Mendelssohn's *Wedding March* suffice to inform the spectator that he is watching a wedding and to remove from his consciousness all visual data which do not directly bear on that ceremony or conflict with his preconceived notions of it.¹⁶³

¹⁶¹. Rapée, 1925, 11. See note, 260.

¹⁶². Quoted in Berg, 1976, 91. Using a similar range of sources, George suggests to the accompanist that "anything associated with the production should be looked for." George, 1912, 18.

¹⁶³. Kracauer, 1960, 141.

But despite Kracauer's objections, the effects he described were likely the intended ones. Containment and comprehensibility were the goals of early film, and its music participated in the attempt to fulfill them.¹⁶⁴ One of the negative results when this occurs is an equation--the music is equal to what you are seeing--that ignores, or is even unaware of the traces and remainders that equations almost always leave.

As Kracauer suggests, quotations could have a smothering effect, but musical associations could also have more serious ideological ramifications. Dismissive and even dangerous connections were made. Rapée includes in his Encyclopedia of Music for Pictures (1925) a section on "Rube Music," including "A Little Coon's Prayer," "By Heck," and "Hey, Paw!" ("also see '*Schottische*'"). For "Mad House" there are two selections, including R. Strauss' "A Hero's Life."

This musical strategy is emblematic of a general lack of ambition and nuance evident in much early film. Contemporary rejections of the medium were often not much more than elitist tirades,¹⁶⁵ but musical evidence suggests that there was indeed cause for much criticism.

Rapée has detailed instructions about portraying villainy, but no thought about withholding that musical label for the sake of suspense or gradual disclosure. More significantly, the result of this strategy is that though many of the pictures themselves may not have allowed for much range or dimension in character, the music, at least in Rapée's influential prescription goes even further, largely denying the possibility of nuance, ambiguity, humanity.¹⁶⁶

This would seem to suggest a combination of how the audience's desires and capabilities are perceived: they want and understand black and white. It also suggests how Rapée himself, and presumably many of the musical directors who used his publications,¹⁶⁷ saw

¹⁶⁴. Burch, 1990, 234-6.

¹⁶⁵. ie., Ervine, 1934.

¹⁶⁶. See Rapée, 1925, 14.

¹⁶⁷. Gorbman calls Rapée's "the definitive lexicon." (1987, 85.)

film and films as functioning. This underconsidered strategy can be seen throughout the silent music lexicons.

Rapée's encyclopedia contains the following subject heading: "African, see 'Cannibal.'"¹⁶⁸ Chinese and Japanese music, both subsumed within a single category, is written by the well know Asian composers Puerner, Clerice, Kempkinski and Bartlett. Under "eccentric" we are referred to "clowns, dwarfs and gnomes," and to the popular concept that difference is equal to deformity.¹⁶⁹

Rapée's prescriptions are typical of silent film/musical parallelism. Parallelism says that music should exactly coincide with the images, the story, and the ideas behind them. But the reality is that images, stories and ideas frequently contain gaps and ruptures, and great difficulties besides. Parallelism can mask elements that are insidious and even dangerous.

Montage and the Counterpoint Analogy

These at least were the ideas of the Soviet revolution, and of its film artists. Musical parallelism was merely emblematic a deeper bourgeois *malaise*, to which their work ran counter. Numerous correctives were proposed, including in the area of film sound. In 1928, as Brecht and Weill suggested new paths for musical narratives, Sergei Eisenstein, Vsevolod Pudovkin and Grigori Alexandrov published the following statement.

¹⁶⁸. Rapée, 1925, 31.

¹⁶⁹. It is important of course not to assume that lexicon usage was monolithic, or universal. Virgil Thomson (1966, 32) says that he never used provided cue sheets for his silent film accompaniments. A contemporary Dutch film journal advised theatre management not to use the scores provided with the films, as they required too much extra outlay for musicians. (In Van Houten, 1992, 24.) Gaylord Carter did not find Rapée very useful, and suggests that the collections were basically for non-musicians. (Carter, personal communication, 1994.)

ONLY A CONTRAPUNTAL USE of sound in relation to the visual montage piece will afford a new potentiality of montage development and perfection.

THE FIRST EXPERIMENTAL WORK WITH SOUND
MUST BE DIRECTED ALONG THE LINE OF ITS DISTINCT
NON-SYNCHRONIZATION WITH THE VISUAL IMAGES. And
only such an attack will give the necessary palpability which will later lead
to the creation of an ORCHESTRAL COUNTERPOINT of visual and
aural images.¹⁷⁰

The coming of sound to film was something of a technological crisis, and it caused a great deal of anxiety in international film communities. But what made Soviet filmmakers most nervous was the possibility that the challenges of sound would distract some from their proper course. They did not want the synchronizations of bourgeois narrative and reactionary ideology which for them ever characterized the bulk of commercial filmmaking, and from which they felt they had turned their own productions.

The Statement on Sound, together with other Soviet writings of the time, suggested that though technical adjustments would be required, a fundamental conceptual continuity would bind the silent period and new sound practices. Though a musical term, a kind of counterpoint had in fact already been central to the great Soviet silent productions. This was *Montage*, which articulated rigorous formal devices by which revolutionary subject matter would be most effectively and meaningfully rendered.

Soviet film pioneer Lev Kuleshov proposed the key concept which came to underpin all montage theory. This was that all meaning in film comes from the

¹⁷⁰. Eisenstein, 1949, p. 258, emphasis in original.

juxtaposition of images, and not from the images themselves.¹⁷¹ Kuleshov concluded that "we must look for the organizational basis of cinema, not within the confines of the filmed fragment, but in the way these fragments relate to one another."¹⁷² Though a great number of variations would be played on this theme, Kuleshov's combinatory concept was the essential core, before and after sound; meaning is made in the juxtaposition of discrete film fragments.¹⁷³

The contrapuntal possibilities of montage are suggested in the definition of the former term: "note against note."¹⁷⁴ This is as Kuleshov suggested; insight is gained through contrasting juxtaposition. "Counterpoint" was not the only dialectical simile, the only non-filmic form that the Soviets found to be like montage. In his "The Cinematic Principle and the Ideogram" (1929) Sergei Eisenstein discusses how Japanese picture writing conveys meaning by the combination of images that would seem at first to be unrelated. Thus "the picture for water and the picture of an eye signifies 'to weep'; the picture of an ear near the drawing of a door = 'to listen,'" etc.¹⁷⁵ He later points out that meaning can become the product and not just the sum of the two separate parts; concepts agglomerate around the combination, leading to a multiplication of signification.¹⁷⁶

In these examples we see how not only film fragments were combined, but also whole traditions and disciplines. Music and picture writing are two of the things that Eisenstein used both literally and figuratively to elaborate montage theory. They both utilize, in fact, telling juxtapositions, and the effects, metaphorically, are *like* those of cinematic montage.

¹⁷¹. See Pudovkin, 1949, 140, for the famous experiment with the actor Mozhukin that proved this claim.

¹⁷². Taylor/Christie, 1988, 73. See also "The origins of montage," an interview with Lev Kuleshov in Schnitzer, ed., 1973, 66-76.

¹⁷³. See Brown, 1988, 165 on similarities between musical composition and montage.

¹⁷⁴. Apel, ed., 1972, 208.

¹⁷⁵. Eisenstein, 1949, 30. The enthusiastic breadth of reference and comparison contains not only the enthusiasm and even joy of montage discourse, but some of its confusions as well.

¹⁷⁶. Ibid., 1949, 28-44.

Eisenstein's term for these multiplying juxtapositions was "intellectual montage." This was actually one of five types of montage that Eisenstein posited, but at the time he validated it as the "high(est) category", and it certainly has received the most attention.¹⁷⁷ Intellectual montage went far beyond a mere comprehensible syntax for film construction. For Eisenstein the dynamic juxtaposition of images--montage--actually reflected the conflicts of the class struggle. Equations were inextricably interrelated: one image + a second image = a concept that results from the collision of the two images, just as thesis + antithesis = synthesis, as capital + labour = (eventually) the utopian workers' state. Formal presentation and film content were a mutual expression of the struggles that informed social reality, a reality that was being transformed by the workers' revolution.

Although "counterpoint" suggests most immediately baroque musical form, which is to say an established, classical model, the film version is a modernist formulation, set contrary to the illusions and complacencies of bourgeois narrative. If musical counterpoint played note against note, then montage sets its own innovation against convention, its own constructedness against the perception of things as natural, shock and alienation against comfort.¹⁷⁸ "Counter" is the key part of the appropriated musical term.¹⁷⁹

This, then, is a kind of musical manifestation of the political avant garde. Always the artful elaborations of intellectual montage are circumscribed by their social purpose and didactic function.¹⁸⁰ And as for music, montage was a *figurative* "counterpoint," where line is played *against* line, and the collision results in a new form, a new thought, a

¹⁷⁷. See "Methods of Montage," in Eisenstein, 1949, 72-83, especially 81. I will return shortly to the other methods.

¹⁷⁸. See Burger, 1984, 81 on constructedness; *ibid.*, 80 on the uses of shock.

¹⁷⁹. Soviet cinema has many well-known and effective examples of intellectual montage. See, for instance, the slaughter in Eisenstein's Strike (1924), titles and the tribunal, spring flaw and revolution in Pudovkin's Mother (1926), candles and clouds in Eisenstein's Old and New (1929), bovines and bourgeois in Dovzhenko's Earth (1930), etc.

¹⁸⁰. For one example, compare Eisenstein, 1968, 26 to the procession sequence in Old

new society. In relation to the famous Statement it was assumed, with some justification, that these same additive, and more often multiplicative strategies would prevail when sound came on the scene.

Formal Counterpoint

In the next sections I will discuss how this figurative, oppositional counterpoint has come to dominate discussions of sound montage, and some of the difficulties connected with this dominance. In preparation for these sections, and as background to a contrapuntal alternative that I will suggest, I would like now to discuss a less problematic film/sound counterpoint. There is precedent for this more formal, less figurative counterpoint in the original theory. Though this alternative has not been the most frequently heard, many applications and discussions testify to its viability.

The following criticism of Dziga Vertov's montage aesthetic gives us some idea of how film actually works musically.

(Vertov) had failed already in the era of the silent films by showing hundreds of examples of most cunning artistry in turning: acrobatic masterpieces of poetic jigsaw, brilliant conjuring of filmic association, but never a rounded work, never a clear, proceeding line. His great efforts of strength in relation to detail did not leave him breath for the whole. His arabesques totally covered the ground plan, his fugues destroyed every melody.¹⁸¹

This critic's objection is that in Vertov's films clear oppositions and resolutions are lost to poetic detail. The consequences relating to montage and meaning are clear.

and New.

¹⁸¹. A. Kraszna-Krausz, writing in 1931 and quoted in Leyda, 1960, 251.

Vertov's films are extremely individual, even eccentric in their forms and expressions. In addition the unclear line insures that the viewer's response, as well as the action that may follow it, are also heterogeneous and unpredictable. Vertov's films do not merely affirm or oppose.¹⁸²

This point will be pursued presently. What I wish to emphasize here is how this critic, decrying the obscuring of cinematic melody (narrative?) by elaborate fugue, rejects Vertov's superlative accomplishment, as suggested by the word "fugue," of a literal, formal cinematic counterpoint. To illustrate that accomplishment let us look once again more closely at the counterpoint analogy.

Roy Prendergast has said that "(s)ound montage is, essentially, constructing films according to the rules of music."¹⁸³ Prendergast is talking about montage here, and in its traditional figurative sense. In this way, I disagree. Film and music are different media, and they play by substantially different rules. The effective application of one discipline's conventions and terminologies to another requires substantial modification and transposition.

But in terms of a cinematic transposition of the musical, Prendergast is right. Revolutionary cinema validated opposition in form and content, and we have seen how montage, and intellectual montage especially, embodied this very opposition. But in addition to this conceptual opposition, montage aesthetics provided for a more strictly formal, even unideological "counterpoint." Interestingly, though many writers since have seemed to assume otherwise, this is the counterpoint we find in the Statement on Sound.

ONLY A CONTRAPUNTAL USE of sound in relation to the
visual montage piece will afford a new potentiality of montage
development and perfection.

¹⁸². They do that too, as the hagiographic Three Songs of Lenin (1934) shows. My position is that they are too full, too fecund to do only that.

THE FIRST EXPERIMENTAL WORK WITH SOUND
MUST BE DIRECTED ALONG THE LINE OF ITS DISTINCT
NON-SYNCHRONIZATION WITH THE VISUAL IMAGES. And
only such an attack will give the necessary palpability which will later lead
to the creation of an ORCHESTRAL COUNTERPOINT of visual and
aural images.

To return to Peter Wollen's formulation, the above description seems fairly
exclusively formal, and original montage theory, as well as subsequent developments had
ample provision for such formal application.

In his Film Technique, Pudovkin identifies "asynchronism" as the basic,
presumably contrapuntal principle of sound film.

It is not generally recognized that the principal elements in sound film are
the asynchronous and not the synchronous; moreover, that the
synchronous use is in actual fact, only exceptionally correspondent to
natural perception.¹⁸⁴

"Natural perception" is a phrase with ideological implications. The "natural" way
of seeing and hearing is different from and superior to the more dominant "naturalized"
way, to the bourgeois constructs of perception. But in addition to this ideological
construct, Pudovkin is also referring to natural *film* perception, or in other words an
ossified sort of viewing. Asynchronism, aside from revolutionary precept, is simply an
alternative to conventional cinema.

¹⁸³. Prendergast, 1992, 26.

¹⁸⁴. Pudovkin, 1949, 157. See 155-65.

Bela Balasz said that the "formal problems of sound montage, the acoustic and musical rules which govern the effect of sounds are purely musical and acoustic questions..." This kind of sound montage is separate from intellectual formulations. When Balazs says "(t)he asynchronous use of sound is the most effective device of the sound film,"¹⁸⁵ he is simply saying, in part, that a one-to-one correspondence between sound and image is not interesting.

This is a recurring refrain in the early discussion of sound, and of music in film. Paul Rotha held that

(t)he old idea that music must fulfil the function of an undercurrent to the picture, just quiet enough to prevent distraction from the screen, being faded down when the commentator speaks, and faded up again when he has finished, this is as antiquated as the type of film for which it is still used. Modern music for sound film must be an integral part of the sound script, must on occasions be allowed to dominate the picture.¹⁸⁶

Here is an important elaboration. If counterpoint is found in the asynchronous, then true cinematic counterpoint would require a radical reformulation of film elements, in which the image's traditional primacy would give way to a freer alternation of elements. This is very similar to Brecht's prescription, and provides a way out of the effaced integration of formal elements that he decried in the opera. Changing the setting from opera, cinematic counterpoint could be achieved when visual and aural lines, cinematic melodies, if you will, alternated in their predominance.

¹⁸⁵. Balasz, 1952, 216, 218.

¹⁸⁶. Quoted in Huntley, 1947, 158. "The term *counterpoint* (designates the) notion of the sound film's ideal state as a cinema free of redundancy where sound and image would constitute two parallel and loosely connected tracks, neither dependent on the other." Chion, 1994, 35-6.

Is this an update of the previously cited Soviet oppositions, aural collisions to result in bourgeois debunkings and revolutionary conceptual syntheses? French film composer Maurice Jaubert wrote the following in 1936:

We want music to give greater depth to our impressions of the visuals. We do not want it to explain the visuals, but to add to them *by differing from them*. In other words, it should not be *expressive*, in the sense of adding its quota to the sentiments expressed by the actors or the director, but *decorative* in the sense of adding its own design to that proper to the screen.¹⁸⁷

Jaubert's mathematical metaphor is provocatively mixed. *Difference* is attained by *adding*, and deepening. Again we can see that this is film counterpoint, but without particular opposition. Music "differs" from the image without anything so drastic (or concrete) as the slaughter of cattle. The innovation is that, through non-synchronization, a greater equality of cinematic elements is introduced as traditional picture/sound hierarchies are eliminated, or at least alternated. These things constitute, in a literal way, counterpoint.

Confusion: Sound Montage and the Concept of Counterpoint

I have discussed how picture and sound tracks can interact contrapuntally. This interaction, though there are ramifications in the realm of meaning, is also substantially formal. I wish now to show how oppositional, figurative counterpoint has come to dominate discourse, and how this dominance has had a complicating and even confusing effect.

¹⁸⁷. Quoted in Steiner, 1989, 93. Emphasis in original.

Given montage precedents, it has been assumed that the "orchestral counterpoint of visual and aural images" would mean a further elaboration of intellectual montage. As with Kuleshov's original pattern, juxtaposition of sound and image was to create meaning, and then action. This assumption recurs throughout sound/music discourse. Hanns Eisler wrote the following in 1947.

If the concept of montage, so emphatically advocated by Eisenstein, has any justification, it is to be found in the relation between the picture and the music. From the aesthetic point of view, this relation is not one of similarity, but, as a rule, one of question and answer, affirmation and negation, appearance and essence.¹⁸⁸

This notion has prevailed. Kristin Thompson, writing in 1980: "(the Statement on Sound's) last two paragraphs do suggest that sound will be used to continue the tradition of silent montage, providing an additional material for the creation of ideas and feelings without an excess of words."¹⁸⁹

Silent montage created ideas through the collision of images. Similarly Thompson identifies "abrupt sound cutting" as "the most varied, daring, and sustained use of contrapuntal sound" in a sample of eleven early Soviet sound films. Her examples of intellectual sound montage involve the ironic use of music, which stands plainly in opposition to the image.¹⁹⁰ These conclusions are consistent with common usage, and effective as such, but there is an important inconsistency that should be noted.

As Michel Chion and Claudia Gorbman have both suggested, parallelism and "counterpoint" (and we might add concord and dissonance) are only defining points

¹⁸⁸. Eisler, 1947, 70. Similarly, for Kracauer counterpoint in film consists of having music oppose the image to create a concept. Kracauer, 1960, 139-142.

¹⁸⁹. Thompson, 1980, 117.

¹⁹⁰. Ibid., 127, 133.

along a whole spectrum of meaning, tonality, interpretation and application. If this is the case, since this is the case, then there is a confusing terminological incompatibility in the Statement on Sound, which most later discussions have also left unresolved. The problem is contained in the following question. *Does a cinematic montage predicated on dialectical oppositions have any correlation to the flowings of musical counterpoint?* Intellectual montage forms concepts through cutting, through the juxtaposition of images, and later of images and sounds. But counterpoint and its musical lines do not cut or collide, they flow.

"Counterpoint, with its emphasis on the linear or horizontal aspect of music, is sometimes contrasted with harmony, which concerns primarily the vertical aspect of music embodied in the nature of the simultaneously sounding combinations of pitches employed."¹⁹¹ This simple distinction had been largely unremarked in film sound theory, until Chion pointed out that "many cases being offered up as models of (audio-visual) counterpoint (are) actually splendid examples of *dissonant harmony*, since they point to a momentary discord between the image's and sound's figural natures."¹⁹²

This is a fundamental weakness in the counterpoint analogy: counterpoint implies horizontal movement, while harmony (or dissonance) is a vertical correspondence of simultaneous tones. A conceptual clash of sound and image creates a kind of multi-sensory chord, and not a flow of intertwining melody. In other words, notwithstanding Chion's observation, in film and film sound discourse there has been and continues to be a confusing ellision of montage and counterpoint, which, though taken to be otherwise, are not the same thing. The fact is that sound film interactions are not just a matter of juxtaposition through opposition, but simultaneous striking, with overtones increasing.

¹⁹¹ . Randel, ed., 1986, 205.

¹⁹². Chion, 1994, 36-7 (see 35-39).

This does not invalidate the counterpoint analogy, nor its many elaborations. In an analogy one object is only *like* another, and certain discrepancies are quite natural.¹⁹³ What I want to suggest is that an over-literal interpretation of the Soviet analogy has muddled montage discussions as they relate to sound and to music. Film/sound counterpoint and especially the flow of concepts connected to it are more complex than we have generally allowed. This is important to my work here, as this greater complexity, this more accurate notion of film counterpoint, will point the way to understanding *classical* music in montage equations.

Overtonal Montage

The complications and elaborations suggested above have their origin in the original theory, and the circumstances in which it developed. The most noted Soviet filmmakers were not able to practically apply the principles set forth in the Statement on Sound.¹⁹⁴ Stalin, the rise of Soviet Socialist Realism, not to mention inferior sound technology and the popular inaccessibility of the avant garde filmmakers' works cut short the shining period before these grand sound film formulations could be executed.

But it was not just history that hobbled the development and execution of sound/film theory in the Soviet Union. Stalinist oppression gave the lie to the concept of neat historical dialectics; contingency and cruelty showed that the product of any conceptual collision could not be safely, synthetically predicted, and that montage oppositions were not any more reliable than parallelism had been. The historical and

¹⁹³. Metaphors do not and need not meet every circumstance. Wagner said he used his operatic leitmotifs like symphonic motives, but acknowledged that the simile is inexact. Both leitmotif and metaphor are as much dramatic as musical/structural. Still they can be expressive and illuminating. Warrack, John, "Leitmotif," in Sadie, ed., 1980, X, 645. For different kinds of musical contrapuntal analogy see Kolker, 1983, 41, on Renoir's Rules of the Game (1939), Louis Jacobs on intertwining stories in Griffith's Judith of Bethulia (1913). Jacobs, 1969, The emergence of film art, New York, Hopkinson and Blake, 56.

¹⁹⁴. For the sad story see Marshall, Herbert, 1983, Masters of the Soviet cinema: crippled creative biographies, London and Boston, Routledge and K. Paul.

human results were of these events were of course overwhelmingly tragic. But conceptually, there was some profitable result.

In montage theory there has been an undue emphasis on intellectual montage, at the expense of other, more complicated montage possibilities. By the time sound actually arrived, Eisenstein was going beyond his first formulations of intellectual montage to a much more complex and multi-valent model. He sensed that things were not as simple as his first statements had suggested.¹⁹⁵ Of course thesis + antithesis could still = synthesis, but more musical terminology, not to mention the coming of sound, suggested to him that there was much more in the air.

"Overtonal montage (grows) from the conflict between the principal tone of the piece (its dominant) and the overtone."¹⁹⁶ The overtone, in contrast to previous crude dialectical assumptions, allows for more than just for and against. It allows for the things in montage construction that we only subconsciously apprehend, but which are still there.

The *central* stimulus...is attended always by a *whole complex* of secondary stimuli....(In acoustics), along with the vibration of the basic dominant tone, comes a whole series of similar vibrations, which are called *overtones* and *undertones*. Their impacts against each other, their impacts with the basic tone...envelop (it) in a whole host of secondary vibrations. If in acoustics these collateral vibrations become merely 'disturbing' elements, these same vibrations in music...become one of the most significant means for affect...¹⁹⁷

¹⁹⁵. For the first statement see "Montage of attractions" in Eisenstein, 1942, 230-33. Also, in another translation, in Taylor/Christie, 1988, 87-89.

¹⁹⁶. Eisenstein, 1949, 79.

¹⁹⁷. Ibid., 66. Emphasis in original.

Here Eisenstein allows for something insufficiently admitted in early montage theory (and some that comes later): unconscious process¹⁹⁸ and affect, or feeling. Unlike the first facile equations, the notion of a "dominant" montage synthesis, followed to its musical end, implies the presence of subdominants, even tonics--or that the dominant reading may not actually be in the home, or true key. And of course, as in modernist literature that subverts narrative, or modern music that eschews key signatures, chord progression and tonality altogether, there is the possibility of some completely new landscape of signification, or unsignification.¹⁹⁹

The significance of the overtone is that the parallels and perpendiculars of intellectual montage give way to far greater complexity and possibility. Though poles may be useful for definition, in actual communication and action we usually find ourselves in between extremes, even in a position to reconcile them.²⁰⁰ Eisenstein says as much, quoting Lenin on the elements of Hegelian dialectics.

...an endless process of *revealing* new aspects, relationships, etc....of *deepening* human perception of things, appearances, processes and so on, from appearance to essence and from the less profound to the more profound essence...from co-existence to causality and from one form of connection and interdependence to another deeper, more general...*return, so to say, to the old.*²⁰¹

Avant gardes imply, and are associated with opposition, and post-Soviet sound theory has validated opposition as the preferable of two alternatives--the other being

¹⁹⁸. See Ibid., 80-81.

¹⁹⁹. See "A course in treatment," in Eisenstein, 1949, 84-107 (esp. 104-5), for a virtuosic rendering of the related literary device of inner speech (cf. Joyce's *Ulysses*). Also see Eisenstein, 1942, appendix 4 and 5, for actual film treatments incorporating and suggestive of these ideas.

²⁰⁰. More on this in-between space in the fifth chapter.

parallelism--open to filmmakers. But as Eisenstein's overtone ideas suggested, oppositions are not always completely authoritative, nor are the dominants that are opposed always easy (or necessary) to invalidate. Beyond that, and even more importantly, between and beyond the thin lines of opposition and genuflection lies a whole world not taken into account. It is in this in-between place that we find the difference between "counterpoint" as used, and as it would be used if applied to its logical, musical end.

Musical Meaning and Contrapuntal Montage

To summarize, as montage theory overprivileged intellectual montage, so film/sound discourse overprivileged the oppositional implications of contrapuntal relations. In doing so it has sold short the complexity of music's relation to image, and to the play of meaning. Complicating formal flowings, *and their conceptual ramifications*, have generally been left out of the equation.

As demonstrated by the illustrations of formal counterpoint in film, when there is a *cinematic* transposition of *musical* counterpoint, it does not necessarily take place at the level of meaning. And as demonstrated in our discussion of dissonant harmony in film, when sound (intellectual) montage is taking place, there is no strictly formal ("rules of music") counterpoint, because formal, musical counterpoint does not collide. And finally (and paradoxically), when this figurative or conceptual counterpoint does take place, the resulting significations exceed standard, for-or-against notions of dialectical intellectual montage. In fact those significations flow and intertwine with practically contrapuntal complexity. No wonder that the "in-between place" that I referred to above can be confusing.

Here are some reasons for the confusion, and some ways out. Pudovkin maintained that music should never just accompany the picture, but that it should retain

²⁰¹. In Eisenstein, 1949, 81. Emphasis added.

its own line. He gives as an example the riot sequence in his 1933 film, Deserter, where the music avoids slavish blow-by-blow illustration, instead maintaining a triumphant tone suggestive of the will to resist that eventually leads to the workers' victory.²⁰²

The picture, which presents the narrative, traces the fluctuations of the workers' struggles, while the music affirms the inevitability of the workers' victory. Here is formal counterpoint, as the image "melody" now departs from, now returns to its musical counterpart, as Pudovkin's "lines" separate and unite and eventually resolve in a cadence of victory. The *figurative* counterpoint is found in the collision of what some of the images mean, and the music's seeming contradiction to that meaning. Significantly, it is that *collision* that Pudovkin most emphasizes²⁰³, and in the collision that eventual resolution and intellectual synthesis are accomplished.

Pudovkin implies two counterpoints, and presents both alternatives, but his work raises questions as to whether the formal and the figurative are compatible, at least with respect to the early theory. Discussing the music in this sequence from Deserter, Kracauer observes that original music does not enact a collision, nor create a concept very effectively. The flow of formal counterpoint undercuts the figurative function, and the audience simply does not understand. "Like sound proper, music is quite able to characterize...concepts and notions as are already given us; but it cannot define or symbolize them by itself alone."²⁰⁴

So, as we have seen, musical parallelism underestimates the complexity of meaning in film, and in the world that film reflects. The "contrapuntal" alternative falls short too. But Pudovkin and the Soviets generally theorized and practiced in order to find an alternative to the underdeterminations of parallelism and its social equivalents. As shown by Brecht's somewhat similar work, this impulse was not limited to film

²⁰². Pudovkin, 1949, 162-165. Playing against the picture was not entirely new. Ido Eyl speaks of oppositional scoring as a matter of course during the early silent period in the Netherlands. In Van Houten, 1992, 45-46.

²⁰³. See Pudovkin, 1949, 165.

circles. And as will be shown by the properties of music as they relate to meaning, success in this regard was still possible.

How? By a better, more realistic understanding of the properties of musical meaning. I will now elaborate Edward Said's idea, presented in the first chapter, that music can be contextualized through reference and allusion. Concurrent with early silent film practice there was a movement in linguistics to counter such overwhelming underdetermination. It is now generally related that before the pioneering work of Ferdinand de Saussure, linguistics concentrated on etymology, and that the actual articulations of language were taken for granted as natural. The account continues by representing, here on the brink of the abyss of modernity, an untroubled human subject, seeing and seen in classical perspective, in a world where things were as they appeared, God in His place and man in his. These perspectives have, of course, changed irrevocably. As his contribution to the great destabilization, Saussure began to ask not just what, but how things mean. In the 1920s and 30s Charles Peirce applied Saussure's innovations to all arenas of communication, or, in his phrase, to all "sign systems."²⁰⁵

The result of these investigations was to call forever into question the idea that language and languages are innocent, our servants, that things are necessarily the way they appear. In both direct and indirect ways, the people we have been discussing grappled with these issues, particularly as they related to the sign systems of music.

In the first chapter we discussed how, up to the present, musical discourse has stayed somewhat clear of these semiotic currents. Questions about musical identity have taken precedence over thinking of music in social spheres, and in social communication. And although attention to technology, microtonal composition, chance operations and the

²⁰⁴. Kracauer, 1960, 142.

²⁰⁵. For a semiotic summary see Silverman, 1983.

problems of inaccessibility are all very important issues, their priority reflect a real resistance to semiotic inquiry.²⁰⁶

But this is not mere stubborn reaction; as with the Deserter example, we have seen some of the complications that have arisen in relation to music and meaning. The fact is that music resists semiotic elaboration more than most modes of communication. In music the link between signifier and signified is not direct or causal, as in many other systems. T-A-B-L-E may be a completely arbitrary sign for the object it represents, but long usage and the immemorial naming functions of human language make the sign comprehensible. But the image, the kind of table these letters bring to mind suddenly opens up a great space. This being the case with such a concrete concept, the vastness of, say, a C major triad, becomes quite daunting. This is not to say that music is not a signifying system. Western musical notation is a rational, comprehensible system of signs, whether one can read the music or not. But grafted onto this denotative plane is a whole complex of referential meanings, which enormously complicate the notion of what and how music means. Parallelism, or the perpendicular? A waltz is a piece of music in 3/4 time, but its rhythm also suggests certain social constructs, a certain period, key composers, and all this whether everyone recognizes the waltz rhythm or not. The polyrhythms of World Music bespeak multi-culturalism, or new colonialism, profound cultural interchange or dabbling dilettantism, an overdue acknowledgment of discounted expressions or a dubious favour done in the name of political correctness. After the first instance, when one pauses to ponder, the connections and disjunctions proliferate.

Of course musicians and musical commentators have also grappled with these problems, and in many different ways. The first established theories of musical meaning were imitation and expression.²⁰⁷ These have substantial use and merit, but they are not systems of signification. Though that sounds like a storm in Beethoven's 6th, and

²⁰⁶. See Kerman 1985; Said, 1991.

²⁰⁷. Monelle, 1992, 1.

Debussy's *Prelude a L'Après-Midi D'Un Faun* evokes languor and *La Mer* has a certain spray surrounding it, these pieces are finally impressions and approximations. Though these are musical sketches that evoke the objects sketched, "impressionism" for music is only a simile, and it falls short of our experience. Language; to be a language, must communicate comprehensibly to all those who use it. The fact is, not everyone will hear the water or be stirred by the storm. This is a kind of musical onomatopoeia, but sounding like something is not the same as utilizing an array of linguistic signs to communicate an idea which lies outside the materiality of those signs. Although languages are full of imitative harmony, of words that sound like things, these words are finally special cases that differ from the mainstreams of language.

As for music's ability to express an idea or articulate some sensation, Raymond Monelle suggests that "music is a presentation of feeling rather than a direct expression."²⁰⁸ And so we seem to have a standoff. Overtonal complications, Pudovkin's practice, music theory, all affirm the great difficulty of suggesting clear meaning, of affecting intellectual montage through music.

But here is where source music, particularly classical music, provides a solution. Early in this chapter we discussed the problems of musical parallelism, and the withering correspondences that it relied upon. But I wish to point out that inadequate execution does not necessarily invalidate the idea behind that execution. Bela Balasz identifies a simple, essential truth, allowing for the *musical* communication and proliferation of meaning.

Asynchronous sound has no need to be natural. Its effect is symbolic and it is linked with the things it accompanies through its significance, in

²⁰⁸. Ibid., 5.

the sphere of the mind, not of reality... (T)he similarity of certain sounds may invite comparisons and evoke associations of ideas.²⁰⁹

This relates to much more than Beethoven's thunder or Debussy's salt smell. Hans Keller makes a simple point that helps us to understand oppositional "counterpoint", and the way music actually can signify. "Musical irony has to work on established material."²¹⁰ Similarly, Michel Chion observes that "(a)udiovisual counterpoint will be noticed only if it sets up an opposition between sound and image on a precise point of meaning."²¹¹ And as Balasz suggests, after the conceptual collision, the moment of montage, the associations begin to flow.

How does this work? When film music steps up from the paralleling, subservient role so often prescribed for it, it suddenly starts to signify. David Raksin recalls that for Laura (1944), "Darryl Zanuck had wanted to throw out about 50 percent of that apartment scene, which is the crucial scene in the picture." This is understandable, since viewed without Raksin's music this famous sequence is not even half finished, or even half comprehensible. The detective investigating the apparent murder appears to be wandering very aimlessly and nearly endlessly through the dead woman's apartment.

Raksin makes good on his promise to "make clear what the detective is feeling."²¹² But it is only through music that that clarity, that meaning is achieved. And how? Through a motif. Tempo and colour suggest what music has always successfully suggested: a feeling. But the *association* of the melody with the person anchors that feeling to a referent and context. That tune = Laura, and it is by association (not to mention the collision with the images) that the music is brought out of the subconscious haze into the realm of the rational.

²⁰⁹. Balazs, 1952, 219, 217.

²¹⁰. Keller in *Music Review*, 1956, 338

²¹¹. Chion, 1994, 38. See Brown, 1988, 172-4, 198-9 for some examples.

²¹². Quoted in Brown, 1994, 283.

Music in film can speak to us, can mean to us. It does so in a straightforward and multiply effective way, though it is too generally discounted or decried. Irene Atkins speaks of the fortuitousness of an *unfamiliar* piece of source music. The reason: "the performance of a well-known piece would have carried with it *too many* built-in connotations."²¹³ But it is precisely through connotation, whether specific to an individual film--Raksin's theme comes to signify "Laura"--or more general, that film music means. And, as we will see in upcoming chapters, "too many" is precisely the advantage, and even the nature of musical meaning.

Bob Last, a pioneer in the use of pre-composed music in motion pictures, notes that usual ways of using and thinking about film music fall short of the actual ways it functions. It doesn't just accompany, it means, and ambiguously.

Film isn't prone to single responses, and of course music isn't either.

Within the visual domain it's difficult to be multivalent, but music inherently works that way. But it works underneath, subconsciously.

You can theorize about the way music means, but ultimately it's intuitive.

Even lyrics don't quite make music concrete. It doesn't exist as a sign system. It retains its ineffable qualities.

Which music means most, or best? Last feels that source music is most valuable because of its previous exposure, and the dense associations it brings. "After the mundane reasons--the director liked the song--enter the intangible emotional ones, and specific historical references, or a combination of the two. Source music crosses all genres, and brings them together too."²¹⁴

²¹³. Atkins, 1983, 45. Emphasis added.

²¹⁴. Last, personal communication, 1995.

Accounts that speak of music as simply congruent or contrasting artificially limit its real effects. For and against are only the most obvious ways that film music works. We will develop the idea of how music works on points of meaning, but the problem is that the point of meaning is almost invariably reduced to binary logic, a one-way interpretation. The fact is that after discord, or concord, comes *conceptual* counterpoint, in which the various implications and possibilities, both tonal and discordant, both parallel and perpendicular, start to sustain and echo and resonate in the spectator's mind.

Sound montage, then, works best when the music emerges as a disturbing detail, when its familiarity and cultural specificity brings history and association into play. But as I have demonstrated, and as the next chapters will amplify, that play is not reducible to strict montage geometries. It is not true that a sound plus an image will always equal *one* interpretation. The overdetermination of classical music, not to mention the range of knowledge and feeling in film artists/artisans and spectators, insures that the most reliable synthesis lies between the reductions of both subservient music and overconfident opposition.

BLANK IN ORIGINAL

CHAPTER 4

NARRATION, PROGRAMME AND NARRATIVE

I have discussed two very separately motivated rejections of musical subordination in classical Hollywood romanticism, as well as of the musical parallelism that in many ways preceded its development. That subordination was seen, at least in part, to exist in the trite and vulgar appropriation of source music, and of the standard repertoire in particular. Although negative reactions are at least partly valid, I have suggested that the polar responses of, respectively, aesthetic music critics and the Soviet montage artists also contain inadequacies. Isolation and plain opposition can be as unhelpful and even crude as that which they are meant to counter. By following up the musical implications of counterpoint I have proposed a solution which lies, in a kind of overtonally dialectical synthesis, in between the extremes.

In this synthesis, collisions between image and music often and most effectively turn on points of reference and association. Previous rejections and ignorings notwithstanding, because of the way it multiplies these points, source music is a particularly interesting and important montage element. In this chapter I will propose a context, through a second film/music analogy, that will help clarify the ways that classical music works in films. This context resides as well in a second film/music synthesis, the product of the collision between the aesthetic and the political avant garde.

In film there has generally been a resistance to and suspicion of source music. This suspicion actually descends from a much older tradition, even more dependent on a pre-musical source. In his 1946 book, Music and Society, Wilfred Mellers noted that pre-Purcellian English music did not generally suffer from hierarchical divisions, that it was open to and participated in by all. He states that in this early period "intense human feeling finds complete realization in terms of music, rather than working by mental

association, as does so much of the music of the nineteenth century (in this sense, of course, *any* great music is impersonal)."²¹⁵

Mellers sets up an opposition between great music and that which works by association (from a source), and so locates the fall from musical egalitarianism in the programmatic forms of the 19th century. Mellers agrees with critics already cited when he states that in that century an "appalling level of taste absorbed both people and artists more or less impartially."²¹⁶ Mellers' contribution to the 1954 Grove dictionary entry on film music confirms his feeling that that direness continued into his present, and is still evident in, for instance, film.

Whether or not one agrees with this take or its tone, it is certainly true that far from Mellers' early-music plenitude, between the extremes of Adorno/Keller elitism and Soviet-like political engagement, lies programme music. Programme music is in some ways a literary/musical hybrid, and many observers have found that the mixture ill serves both components. But as I hope to demonstrate, far from being a poor servant of either master, programme, or principles related to it, can effectively mediate seemingly irreconcilable positions. It brings opposites together and suggests a substantial way to understand and appreciate all music, and other cultural phenomena besides.

Just as the counterpoint analogy has been both confusing and extremely liberating for film studies, so too does programme music have somewhat perilous, but also very important literal and figurative uses. These uses are the focus of this chapter. Speaking literally, programme has some clear and illuminating similarities to film music. Speaking figuratively, with regard to the broader contexts and various predispositions with which we come to film, film music, and especially classical music in film, programme applies to and enriches every instance.

²¹⁵. Mellers, 1946, 54.

²¹⁶. Ibid, 103.

Adapting Programme to the Present

I will presently define and discuss programme music in the dictionary sense, but I wish to note at the outset that my ultimate use of programme is a decided appropriation, involving a transposition of the original expressions to current conditions. In this current sense, programme extends far beyond Hector Berlioz and Franz Liszt. As appropriated and transformed here, programme traditions suggest that music always has reference to some kind of narrative, artistic or cultural, beyond it. As I will demonstrate, this referentiality exists as a quality of the music itself, as well as being a property of musical interpretation.²¹⁷ Also, consistent with the musicalness or even indeterminacy of conceptual counterpoint, I will take the liberty of grafting on ideas that polite parallels or perpendiculars would not normally admit.

The first of these grafts will serve to ground the discussion here of programme, and I will return to it in the final chapter as I summarize the implications of this study.

In chapter three I discussed the ideas of Bertolt Brecht, and how they opened up and defined a political, progressive space for musical action. Those ideas were consistent with, and in some ways led to some fairly strict Marxist prescriptions. I have questioned these, but I wish now to point out that Brecht's work not only contains the seeds for my critique, but also an apt rebuttal to it.

Today there may be an excessive solemnity to discussions of Brecht, connected with his presumed progressiveness and seriousness of purpose. The grave sound of "epic theatre" and the predominance of terms like "alienation effect" have distanced us from the sense of fun and play in Brecht.²¹⁸ More to the point, though vulgar Marxism

²¹⁷ . For elaboration on the idea of programme as both creative and receptive, see discussions in my chapter five on intentionality, intertextuality and phenomenology as relating to musical quotation in film.

²¹⁸ . In addition to the plays themselves, note the lightness found throughout the selections in Brecht, 1964. Brecht's famed "Short Organum for the Theatre" (Ibid., 179-205) states that "entertainment" and "pleasure" are the first and the final necessities for any theatrical endeavour.

may use him with a dialectical severity, close attention to both the work and its method reveals an important sense of contingency, even chaos.

In their introduction to the collected works, Ralph Mannheim and John Willett discuss Brecht's "contempt for 'originality.'" This contempt was repeatedly revealed in the way that Brecht borrowed, without attribution, from other sources, in the way he took credit for the work of a collective, or, conversely, did not take credit for some of his own substantial collaborative contributions.²¹⁹

In the end, Mannheim and Willett conclude that Brecht was a "piecemeal writer."

These works were patched together from a variety of sources, then taken apart and restitched, sometimes with loose threads dangling; their eventual length and shape was never all that clearly determined.²²⁰

The significance of Brecht's method lies in part in its similarities to the scramblings of Hollywood composers and the musical appropriations of other sources in narrative films. Here, as in Brecht's work, depth and insight might well be found if we've a mind to look for it.

More than that, Brecht's approach is analogous to the figurative workings of programme that I am proposing here. Clear and neat are not always accurate, or even necessary. Sources, appropriations, determinants are multifarious, complex, not always acknowledged or even realized. The unpredictability of history, the vagaries of musical meaning, the ebbs and flows of literal counterpoint all suggest how complicated, confounding and revelatory the mixing of media and disciplines can be.

²¹⁹. Brecht, 1976, xv-xvi, xx.

²²⁰. Ibid., xxxi-xxxii.

Programme Music and the Function of the Literary Text

Now, before developing these ideas, I will discuss programme music in its original setting and definition. Programme music was current from the second half of the nineteenth century and into the early part of the twentieth.²²¹ It emerged in earnest with Beethoven's Sixth Symphony (1808) and Berlioz' *Symphonie fantastique* (1830).²²² Beethoven's composition, in addition to its not unconventional musical (symphonic) structure, has a narrative component. The music is anchored to this extra-musical narrative by means of evocative movement titles as well as by imitative orchestral effects and other associative devices. Through these devices the symphony relates a kind of country day-in-the-life, which includes the musical suggestions of flowing water, birds, peasant dances, a summer storm and a horn call.

Berlioz takes Beethoven's mix of narration and music a step further. Instead of the usual movement titles which give instructions for tempo, dynamics and expression (*allegro con brio*, etc.), Berlioz essentially names his movements for their dramatic content. "Reveries--Passions," "A Ball," "Scene in the Country," "March to the Scaffold" and "Dream of a Witches' Sabbath" all signal an important change: a story is as important as the music being used to support it. Berlioz made this reversal explicit by publishing a programme with his symphony, to be read before listening, in which the events of his musical narrative were made very explicit.

These compositions were original, as were the narratives attached to them. Another kind of programmatic musical narrative would adapt pre-existing texts (play, poem, legend, even landscape²²³) to new musical settings. In this regard symphonic overtures, particularly some by Beethoven, are directly antecedent to later programmatic forms. It is important to remember in the context of this study that this music's

²²¹. This discussion on programme music draws upon materials in Scruton, 1980 and Randel, 1986, as well as other citations listed below.

²²². See Newman, 1910, 108-9 and 125-32, Randel, 1986, 657-9 (sec. III) for details concerning partially programmatic practices from earlier periods of music history.

expressivity was directly related to the theatrical works (Goethe's *Egmont*, Shakespeare's *Coriolanus*) which it supported.

This interdependence is not without precedent²²⁴, and I will presently demonstrate the pattern's recurrence in film culture. As for programme music itself, the dictionary account (Scruton) is that it evoked dramatic events while maintaining musical self-sufficiency; Beethoven and Berlioz both composed overtures which were related to literary sources (Scott's *Waverly*, and *Rob Roy*), but which were performed separate from any other kind of literary or theatrical setting. But I wish to emphasize that although the degree of literary preeminence varied, in much serious music the communication of musical meanings was at first anchored to and made possible by narrative and literary forms, by text.

Franz Liszt is the central figure in the development and codification of the symphonic poem and of programme music, both of which terms he coined. Liszt's early piano pieces (1830s) contain descriptive passages, and though he largely avoided a too literal (imitation and word painting) rendering of the motivating literary or historical sources, he nevertheless sought to evoke the external by musical means. Later he composed a series of 12 symphonic poems (1848-58) that elaborated this external strategy. Examples of the kind of subjects that interested Liszt include a rendering of nature's immensity (*Ce pu'on entend sur la montagne*, 1848-9, after Hugo), a description of a fifth century battle (*Hunnenschlacht*, 1857, inspired by a painting), a work suggestive of the characters of Hamlet and Ophelia (*Hamlet*, 1858), homages to the suffering of creative genius (*Prometheus*, 1850) and the uplifting power of art (*Orpheus*,

²²³. As in Mendelssohn's *Hebrides Overture* (or *Fingal's Cave*).

²²⁴. ie. word painting, typified by but not limited to Monteverdi, where melodies and melodic accompaniments in some way followed the sense of a song's lyric. Later examples include, for instance, Schubert's "Gretchen at the Spinning Wheel," with its circular instrumental support, or *Erlkonig*, where the accompaniment suggests a galloping horse. See Randel, ed., 1986, 935.

1853-4). Liszt also wrote full scale symphonic works based on *Faust* and the *Inferno*, with passages suggestive of specific episodes from both works.

The next major elaborations of the symphonic poem depended in different ways, but just as surely on elements emerging from outside the music. Czech and Russian composers wedded descriptive impulses to national and nationalistic subjects, again through recourse to historical narratives and attempted descriptions of native landscapes. Examples include Glinka's uncompleted *Taras Bulba*, Mussorgsky's *St. John's Night on the Bare Mountain* (1867), Tchaikovsky's *Romeo and Juliet* (1869), Smetana's *Ma Vlast* (1872-79), and a great many more, reaching up to and past the generally acknowledged close of the programmatic cycle in the 1920s. All of these compositions were dependent upon a familiarity with source material. Where such familiarity was absent, or where the work's title did not anchor the music to some specific association, its communicability remained open to question and its intent at least was not fully fulfilled.

Roger Scruton points out that there has been much difficulty rising out of the connections and differences between "narrative" and "emotional" depictions, and to what programme music actually is. He emphasizes that Liszt did not want to describe objects or events through music. The music put listeners in the "same frame of mind as could the objects (or theme, idea) themselves."²²⁵ Scruton maintains that Liszt's desire was to evoke or suggest. This approach allows for programmatic anchoring, but also, if one is not aware of the anchor, a more intrinsically musical experience.²²⁶

²²⁵. Scruton, 1980, 15: 284, 283. "If the music does achieve a real connexion, it will illustrate the subject; but you will get nothing out of the expectation that the subject will illustrate (the music)." "Study of the whole poem (Lenau's *Don Juan*) will be much more illuminating in the light of the music than study of the music in the light of the poem." Tovey, 1937, IV, 84, 156. It should be noted that Tovey was not necessarily a great lover of programme music, or at least of the concepts behind it. Tovey, 1937, IV, 129, 133, 140, 149-55.

²²⁶. "All programme music must indeed be representative, but it must also be, in part, self contained; that is, a given phrase must not only be appropriate to the character of Hamlet or Dante, or suggestive of a certain external phenomenon such as the wind, or the fire, or the water, but it must also be interesting as music." Newman, 1910, 112. See also Tovey, 1937, IV, 1, 155. However, Newman does go on to argue against the "fallacy"

In his dictionary account, Scruton stresses the musical self-sufficiency of programme music. His entry affirms the possibilities and validities of the form. But it should be noted that some of Liszt's actual comments about programme music contradict Scruton's take on it, and these contradictions suggest some of the reasons that in different circles programme has been so generally discounted, and even derided.

In programme music...the return, change, modification, and modulation of the motifs are conditioned by their relation to a poetic idea...All exclusively musical considerations, though they should not be neglected, have to subordinated to the action of a given subject.²²⁷

Programme music was subservient to the external subject. It follows a theme, or relates to a story, or to a character. Liszt saw that there had been no real place for narrative in symphonic music. In opening up such a place, he prescribed from the beginning that the music should be understood through its programme, or in other words through its literary referent. And it was the referent that was most important.

Not only did the position of the music (subordinate) cause discomfort for musical purists, but the use of that music could be troubling in another sense. Liszt defined a programme as a

preface added to a piece of instrumental music, by means of which the composer intends to guard the listener against *a wrong poetical*

that programme music should be just as satisfying to the listener who is unaware of the programme as to the initiated. Ibid., 147-57.

²²⁷. Liszt, quoted in Scruton, 1980, 15: 284. Tovey, in his discussion of Berlioz, points out how inadequate these subordinations could sometimes be. Though delighted with much of Berlioz' music, he found that it often/usually fell far short of any substantial correspondence with the proclaimed programme. Tovey, 1937, IV, 74-89. Others, observing the same gap, were not open to these delights. See Shaw, 1981, I, 214 for an amusing dig at the programmatic content in Liszt's *Inferno*.

interpretation, and to direct his attention to the poetical idea of the whole or to a particular part of it.²²⁸

The symphonic poem declined as modernism challenged these very ideas. We have already considered how the aesthetic musical avant garde rejected the subordination of music to narrative, opting instead for the notion of music's abstraction and independence. The same is true of the political and ideological critics who rejected the rigid parallelism of correct poetical interpretations. We see then how extra-musical determinants contributed to the eclipse of programme music, which coincided not only with the rise of the Vienna school, but also with modernist decenterings and deconstructions of meaning. More moderate critics too may have felt that it was finally impossible to merge the formal requirements of the two forms. "The natural architecture of music was not that of poetry."²²⁹

The dilemmas of programme music in the 20th century take on a special interest and pertinence to this study, since it shares the very incompatibilities and compromises engendered by using music underneath (underneath being the standard position of film music in commercial narrative contexts) film images. Is there a solution?

Once again, here is the present standoff. Musical avant gardes, and other voices too²³⁰, resist subordinate forms and parallelism, while conventional film community discourse²³¹ protests too much their validity. However, my feeling is that both constituencies could do with a shift, the specifics of which are suggested in some of the ways that programme music relates to film. With regard to that relation we will see that,

²²⁸. Quoted in Scruton, 1980, 15: 283. Emphasis added. Also quoted in Berg, 1976, 86.

²²⁹. MacDonald, Hugh, 1980, "Symphonic poem," in Sadie, ed., 18: 432.

²³⁰. ie. musical absolutism, which rejects the idea of extrinsic, referential musical meaning for the notion of inherent, purely musical significance. This has been expressed through different periods and contexts; for a classic romantic expression see Hanslick, Eduard, 1986, On the beautiful in music, Indianapolis, Hackett Pub. Co (translation of an 1891 edition); Hanslick, 1963, ed. Henry Pleasants, Music criticisms: 1846-1899, Baltimore, Penguin.

whatever music's inherent significance, it is in combination with other contexts and considerations that it most vividly and directly comes to participate in the exchange of meaning, and feeling besides.

Programme and Film Music: Formal and Ideological Parallels

There are striking parallels between programme music and the conventions of classical film scoring. At first the similarities, as well as the dominant reactions to them, appear to be negative. After this section I will return to the question of whether they must be so considered. Again, Liszt said that a programme was

any preface in intelligible language added to a piece of instrumental music, by means of which the composer intends to guard the listener against a wrong poetical interpretation, and to direct his attention to the poetical idea of the whole or to a particular part of it.

I suggest that the preface Liszt describes could also be a film script, a directorial concept, the expectation of a producer, or of a targeted audience. These are possible "programmes" that precede and contain the composition. In addition the music itself also acts as a sort of programme. As has been mentioned many times, guarding against wrong poetical interpretations is precisely the mandate of the classical film score.

The way programme music guards against these wrong interpretations is also a striking echo of standard film music mandates.

In programme (*or film*) music...the return, change, modification, and modulation of the motifs are conditioned by their relation to a (*narrative*)

²³¹. ie. those advocating "invisible" film scores, that are only sensed subconsciously.

idea...All exclusively musical considerations, though they should not be neglected, have to be subordinated to the action of a given subject.

Chapter two's aesthetes note that in both forms this subordination means underdetermination. This results in a closing off of musical meaning and musical feeling, all through an excess of concrete reference. Programme and film would be, in their estimation, a nefarious binding of the worst in nineteenth and twentieth century musical practice.

But my position is that music, especially placed narratively, can also resist the restrictions of musical muzzlings and excessive subordination. It was not in prescribing programmes, but in seeking to limit their effects that Liszt was unduly timid. Music, even, especially with some extra-musical prologue, is automatically overdetermined. This overdetermination may imperil the dictionary definition of programme, but it opens up rich metaphorical possibilities.

Summarizing to this point, programme music is *like* film music. As with film and counterpoint, this statement has both literal and figurative meaning. In the first instance, like with Beethoven's, Berlioz' or Liszt's original compositions, specially composed film music requires narrative elements external to it to be fully comprehensible. In the second instance, appropriated compositions--source music--bring with them programmatic information, relating not only to specific pieces and their composers, but also to entire historical settings, institutions, ideologies.

Was Rachmaninov responding to the extra-marital affair of a London doctor and a suburban housewife when he wrote his Second Piano Concerto? Certainly not. But the core of this programme analogy is that programme is contained not only in what is intended, but also by what is apprehended. Regardless of what the composer was thinking, or even what motivated the filmmakers, the juxtaposition of source music and

the motion picture creates overtones of ideology and history, and effects a multiplication of meaning.

Programme music's inexact, semi-metaphorical relation and similarity to film music illuminates a great number of film music contexts. Some of these are literal, practical ones.

Since music that suggested an emotional mood, created atmosphere, or imitated a natural sound was prized by the film musician, programme music, of one sort or another, was the standard accompaniment for the silent film.²³²

Film appropriations of programme music were conscious, though the use of Liszt's language might not have been. Regardless, the following echo is dramatic.

Charles Berg observes that "(a)s discontent with *inappropriate accompaniments* mounted, the central question asked by film musicians was how to realize an *appropriate, dramatically relevant score*."²³³ Liszt spoke similarly; film music's parallelism directly descends from programmatic ideals of appropriateness and relevance.²³⁴ And as the following quotation suggests, the film narrative as it relates to musical accompaniment is very similar to negative takes on musical programmes.

In seeking to have the music cleave as closely as possible to the pictures, to action, expressions, sentiments, etc., the aim, long before the introduction of the optical track, was already the mechanistic

²³². Berg, 1976, 84. For a critique of programme music and its impulses in film, see Eisler, 1947, x, 13, 35, 57, 103.

²³³. Ibid., 99. Emphasis added.

²³⁴. See Wagner's criticism that Berlioz' compositions are not *musically* rational, because

subordination of sound to picture...(A) sound should never be anything but the consequence of the movement of a picture.²³⁵

In both musical and cinematic settings, looking at it from a certain perspective, the result was a kind of crippling correlation, a shotgun accompaniment by music of things external to it. This is the double context of parallelism. Giuseppe Becce's 1919 Kinothek, which London identifies as the first illustrative compilation, is full of programmatic selections which are used to correspond with narrative moods and emotions. Becce's collection

contained, if we follow the romantic conception of programme music, all the moods of men and the elements, every kind of reaction to human destiny, musical drawings of nature and animals, of peoples and countries: in short every sphere of life, well and clearly arranged under headings.²³⁶

A few years earlier W. Tyacke George demonstrated that very range.

We may have alarm, abhorrence, ardour, curiosity, dreaming, distrust, fear, faith, happiness, danger, death, doubt, hope, hatred, excitement, grief, sorrow, pain, foreboding, joy, jealousy, humour, suffering, sorrow, resignation, ridicule, listening, laughter, tears, salvation, resentment, reserve, meditation, prayer, surprise, longing, pining, wishing, triumph,

they are appropriate and relevant to *extra*-musical imperative. In Newman, 1910, 143.

²³⁵. Burch, 1990, 236.

²³⁶. London, 1936, 55.

and all the various phases that go to make up the gamut of human emotions, each of which is capable of individual musical illustration.²³⁷

As in Becce's guide (and Rapée's too), George goes on to list both serious and popular compositions that accomplish this illustration.

In chapters two and three we considered two film era responses to this apparently smothering excess of concrete reference. But even before the rise of these avant gardes, more mainstream musical culture also hewed to other alternatives. I will now look more closely at a romantic response to programme music. The response is negative, but I hope to show that between this and the continued rejections of ideological critics, there exists a helpful synthesis of the two approaches. As with musical film counterpoint, a valid film programme strategy is already contained within apparently opposed critical factions.

Turn of the century musical commentator Philip Goepp consistently celebrates "(musical) meaning in pure tones," but generally devalues the notion of programme music. Speaking of Beethoven Goepp says that "on the whole, the untitled symphonies are much to be preferred."²³⁸ "As soon as the mind occupies itself with the details of an imaginative picture, the musical attention flags."²³⁹

In a very large degree, programme music is...a pretty, intellectual game, a subtle flattery, a mental feat, a guess at conundrums. Generally, there is a real loss in the apparent gain. If the emotional is the true attitude, it can be seen how the title, by absorbing attention, prevents a pure enjoyment and the test by natural perception.

²³⁷. George, 1914 (2nd ed.), 15. See Hegel, 1979, 128, for a similar list of absolute music's expressive versatility.

²³⁸. Goepp, I, 38, 125. See also discussions throughout on Mendelssohn, some Beethoven (particularly the 3rd, 6th and 9th symphonies), Berlioz, Liszt, and Richard Strauss. Merits and charms notwithstanding, Goepp always finds that these programmatic symphonies fall short of absolute musical ideals.

Creating a false interest, the label withdraws the normal, unbiased attention from the music itself, preconceiving the mind to an *a priori*, arbitrary connection or significance. In one way, entitled music is like the clever juggler who tricks by diverting attention from the real to a pretended act; in another, it is like the poor painter who holds the witless mind by the strength, not of his art, but of the printed label.²⁴⁰

Goepp's contention was that music had enough inherent narrative already, and that externals used to tie it down were superfluous, even vulgar.

For his part Elie Siegmeister, a Marxist musical critic writing here in the 1930s, found that programme music (and ultimately all of late Romanticism) and its alleged connections to the world outside finally insulated the listener from the most pressing externals, alienating him from the issues that should have most concerned all, and that were art's proper purview.

Later romantic music became at once an emotional compensation and a spiritual salve for the commercial middle class audience...It became the fashion for the artist to be isolated from 'ugly' reality and to deal only with supernal, grandiloquent exaltation, grand sorrow; either the most thrilling ecstasy or the most abysmal despair. Nothing in between would do...Relishing melodrama and big doses of emotion for their money, the bourgeois audience came to the concert hall to be ecstatically exalted and furiously depressed, so that the tedium and spiritual emptiness of the day-to-day commercial grind could be forgotten.²⁴¹

²³⁹. Ibid., I, 174-5. See also II, 230-31.

²⁴⁰. Ibid., I, 126.

Siegmeister identifies the traditional social uses of music, how it has from antiquity been used as an aid to labour. In modern times, and especially through late Romantic music, ancient usages are now subsumed in and by the culture industry. If we were to apply this strictly materialist view to Hollywood and its factory produced films, we would indeed find that film music is used to

energize, to lighten the monotony, to set the rhythm for repeated labour movements...(and) to regulate the pace...of large groups of workers, as well as to stimulate and help workers spur one another on in the performance of tedious and protracted tasks.²⁴²

This striking description applies on the level of the composers, who's idealistic and romantic view of the artist consoles them in their indentured circumstances, and distracts them from the anaesthetizing use to which their music is put; and it works especially at the point of audience reception and use, as the glosses of melodrama and post/sub-19th century music mask the standardized nature of the product, and the underlining ideologies it carries.

Siegmeister's description also transposes effectively to the level of music's ceremonial or ritual functions²⁴³. Now, instead of helping the listener/participator understand his society and his or her place in it, late Romantic music, as well as the film romanticism that grew from it, smooths over and hides the various gaps (cuts, etc.) that were part of the cinematic and societal artifice. In either case the music's emphatic and overdetermined nature worked insidiously upon the audiences. Individual difference and individual discontent were ellided, contributing to the creation of a community of

²⁴¹. Siegmeister, 1938, 51.

²⁴². Ibid., 22.

²⁴³. Ibid., 23.

undifferentiated, passive subjects who were then delivered over to a variety of ideological and commercial hailings.

This at least is the simplified Marxist rendering of the effects of music in the above-mentioned settings. Here, in 19th century Europe and in 20th century Hollywood, is music produced for profit and not for use: the romantic idiom, in its programmatic manifestations (Liszt to Mahler and R. Strauss) makes one forget and is good for business.

The last chapter questioned the effectiveness of these simple oppositions. The question remains; are Berlioz or Liszt, or at least the conventions they developed, the most egregious examples of dangerous ideological effacement? In relation to a materialist critique, forgetting, hailing and subject obliteration are all more native to the discourse of musical absolutism, to non-programmatic music. From this perspective the validated musical forms were potentially more dire than the underappreciated ones.²⁴⁴

As we have seen, Horkheimer and Adorno discussed the once liberating possibilities of the "detail," the art element that makes itself seen, heard or felt. Siegmeister's criticisms of late 19th century music can be countered when we consider the possible awareness of process that can be gained through programme. As we will see, programme music, and film's appropriation of it did not have to smother, and by no means did they always do so.

Programme, Film Music, and Multi-Valent Meaning

The film community and those sympathetic to programme music have had their own consistent response to constant undervaluing. In 1910 Ernest Newman contended that "the desire to write programme music is rooted in humanity from the very

²⁴⁴. Cf. the Soviets' later preference for serials and circuses over respectable theatre and literature.

beginning."²⁴⁵ In other words, films were not the first to subordinate music to external narrative. Film composer Elmer Bernstein: "(t)he concept of using music as an adjunct to what is basically a mixed medium is ancient...Music in its inception was really adjunctive...Its emergence as pure entertainment was relatively late in history."²⁴⁶ If film music was suspect for its supportive functions, then it was in good company.

Roy Prendergast says that appeals to programme precedents are not mere self-justification; Wagner, Puccini, Verdi and Strauss faced and solved the exact same kind of dramatic problems the film composers had. Prendergast makes a point of quoting "distinguished music historian" Donald Jay Grout. "For Wagner, (too) the function of music was to serve the ends of dramatic expression."²⁴⁷

Are these self-justifications, or valid connections? Both perhaps, but the real similarities should not be ignored. Parallels between programme music and the conventions of classical film scoring are especially evident in Liszt's career and compositional practice. For a period he collaborated with orchestrators to help him with his scores.²⁴⁸ With some resemblance to the later film practice of writing variations to familiar external airs (including classical ones), we find Liszt denying Mephistopheles his own theme in the third movement of his *Faust* Symphony. Instead he simply parodies the first movement's Faust theme.²⁴⁹ Also in connection to apparent appropriations of outside material, Liszt also freely, and sometimes modestly composed on themes by other composers.²⁵⁰ Finally, his technique of "transformation of themes" uncannily prefigures the conventions of Hollywood scoring, as well as providing an

²⁴⁵. Newman, 1910, 114.

²⁴⁶. Quoted in Thomas, 1979, 160. One might add that music's emergence as feeling's pure expression, as suggested by Romantic absolutists, was also comparatively recent.

²⁴⁷. In Prendergast, 1994, 39-40.

²⁴⁸. Searle, 1985, 288.

²⁴⁹. Ibid., 297-8, 302. For similar variation or parody of classical themes, listen to Lou Forbes' musical direction in *Intermezzo* (1939), or Korngold's score for *Kings Row* (1941).

²⁵⁰. As in the 1855 *Prelude and Fugue*, with sections taken from a theme by Meyerbeer. Ibid., 302. Liszt's numerous transcriptions and adaptations are also related.

alternative to Eislerian claims that serious music needs space and time to properly develop musical material.²⁵¹

One may not like these connections, but they are not as strained or artificial as they have been made out to be. For example, in their film music primer Lang and West cite grand opera as an ideal model for appropriate film accompaniment.²⁵² At the time cultured film-haters may well have bristled at the presumption. But unlike later writers, these early primers do not have to reach so far back for respectable models. Here is an essential point.

In 1920 Puccini, and programme music too, are still more or less contemporaneous. If this music was not quite cutting edge, it still maintained a high level of respectability, as well as a considerable popular currency. We have seen how film used classical music to garner respectability, but we may also allow that much of this respectable music was also, simply, familiar.²⁵³ Elmer Bernstein and Roy Prendergast, and the silent period figures too may have been rationalizing slightly, but their points are also true.

Why is this important? Because it means that film music appropriations were not only mere appropriations. Film musicians and later composers too, as well as the audiences who heard them, were using materials to which they had a valid relations. It also means that when outside music was brought in to cinematic settings, the culture and conditions and associations of that outside music were also brought in.

²⁵¹. Built on a monothematic approach, Liszt's transformation of themes was "a process by which one or more short ideas are subjected to various techniques of alteration (change of mode; change of rhythm, meter or tempo; ornamentation; change of accompaniment etc.) to form the thematic basis of an entire work." Searle, 1985, 260. Also Sadie, ed., 1988, 130.

²⁵². Lang and West, 1920, 6.

²⁵³. See Harlow Hare's discussion concerning a number of these issues (musical precedents for quotation, contemporary familiarity with 19th century art music) in a review of J.C. Breil's Birth of a Nation score, in Brown, 1988, 171-73. See Anderson, 1988 for an account of how music helped make film respectable. The specific compositions Anderson cites as being used in the silent era are part of a musical culture much more diversified than is conventionally admitted. For more evidence of this

As an example, film organist Gaylord Carter matter of factly says that '(m)y score (for The Thief of Baghdad) consists of a theme for 'The Thief' character that I composed, material from (Rimsky-Korsakov's) *Scheherazade* of course..."²⁵⁴ "Of course"; for Carter, Ali Baba and *Scheherazade* just go together. They, along with their literary and musical and cinematic expressions, simply belong. In a similar sense Carter also used the *Dies Irae* from Berlioz' *Symphonie Fantastique* for the unmasking scene in The Phantom of the Opera (1925), feeling that he had merely, and quite justifiably transposed one generation's macabre to another's.²⁵⁵

So, while film music figures worked to justify themselves and overcome musical prejudices, they also just acted naturally, or at least continued to do what others had done before. George Antheil, writing in 1936:

Picture music is more closely allied to the dramatic forms than to the symphonic. By its very nature it must be loose in form and style. It is, quite simply, a kind of modern opera. And operatic music must certainly follow the emotional content of its drama and its accompanying poetry. Unless it does so, it will seem totally beside the point. This is just as true with picture music.²⁵⁶

As it is stated by Antheil, the dramatic form, "a kind of modern opera" text, is just another programme, or something external to the music (drama and poetry) which sets and contextualizes that music.

diversification see Russell, 1987, Turner and Miall, 1972 and 1982.

²⁵⁴. Behlmer, 1989, 29.

²⁵⁵. Ibid., 54. Also see James, 1989, 63, on adapting Gounod's *Faust* for a modern screening of the silent "Phantom"; and Larson, 1987, 7, concerning how original "Phantom" composer Gustav Hinrichs composed from Gounod's work in the first place. Gaston Leroux's original novel also borrows freely from Goethe's text.

²⁵⁶. Quoted in Steiner, 1989, 90.

With regard to film appropriations of source music, this suggests an intriguing musical mutability. Compositions were inflected by the original source as well as the present cinematic context. The result could contradict or confuse, but, a certain cavaliness notwithstanding, it could also overcome a perceived limitation lying at programme's core. Multiple musical elaborations meant that Liszt's "wrong poetical interpretation" ceased to be such a problem. Programmes could carry their original sense as well as being transposed to other settings and tailored to other narratives.

Dictionary objections may arise at this point. As already mentioned, Roger Scruton warns against a common misapprehension. Music with "a narrative or descriptive meaning (for example, music that purports to depict a scene or a story)" is validly programmatic. However Scruton feels that to refer to all music with extra-musical reference, to events, personalities or feelings as programmatic is impossibly broad, reductive, even useless.²⁵⁷

But the fact is that, though Scruton quite properly points out some of the dangers of over-generalizing the programme, generalization is still appropriate. Other institutional statements allow for a broader application of the principle.

Recent scholars argue that the dichotomy between absolute and program music is false, that the best program music can be appreciated without knowledge of the program...Furthermore, some of the finest absolute works (eg. the symphonies of Haydn) are rich in references to dance rhythms and other stylistic conventions that a listener must recognize in order to follow the composer's thought fully.²⁵⁸

²⁵⁷. Scruton, 1980, 283.

²⁵⁸. "Program music," in Randel, ed., 1986, 657.

I would take this statement even further. Given the models of multivalent meaning already presented, given intentions and receptions and indeterminacies and connections, I contend that *all* music has a programme, even several programmes. Literally, intentionally, this means that our understanding of a composition by Franz Liszt is enhanced when we understand *his* intended, explicit pre-text to that composition. This means that our understanding of a composition by Franz Josef Haydn is enhanced when we understand the implicit, mostly masked, but still relevant pre-text to *his* composition. This is programme music. Speaking figuratively (and receptively), with regard to “programme music” that goes beyond the official Grovian definitions, the programme multiplies when we graft Liszt onto a text by Max Ophuls (ie. Letter from an Unknown Woman, 1949), or when we add Haydn to a text by Louis Malle (Lift to the Scaffold, 1957). And it multiplies even more when we apprehend the combination.²⁵⁹

Programme music has not heretofore been applied, at least in the present sense, to discussions about film music specifically, and cinematic intertextuality in general. Clearly, after my own appropriation and application of the term and its related principles, further discussion is required to more firmly situate it. But in this preliminary sense I deem it valid, and valuable, to urge the connection. Outside narratives, context, inflect all musical experience. This is especially true of appropriated film music. The limitations of the programme are not in any smothering it is supposed to do, but in not taking the concept far enough.

Programme Everywhere

(Some) have so broadened (programme's) application as to use the term for all music that contains an extra-musical reference, whether to objective

²⁵⁹ . Or, in different ways, when we do not apprehend. Chapter five deals explicitly with the range of creative and receptive possibilities across intertextual fields.

events or subjective feelings...(This application) is...so wide as to be virtually meaningless.²⁶⁰

As with the counterpoint analogy, literal and figurative programmes may differ. In dictionary terms, Scruton is arguably correct. But we are looking at the way that external musical, and film/musical context is like a programme. We are looking at the way that programmatic elements, references and allusions²⁶¹, with the associations and connotations connected to them, become the elements of contrapuntal and montage equations. In these applications, the generalization works and we are firm ground. There is ample support for this idea. This section will demonstrate how even, especially from a music community point of view, programme is everywhere.

Anthony Newcomb (1984) points out how even non-programmatic orchestral music from the 19th century would quite frequently, and quite casually be written and heard as connected to, as expressions of larger literary forms, or of prevailing ideas and themes beyond specific literary works. To understand these works, Newcomb says, we must look beyond formal properties and musical architecture. Other questions pertain. What were people thinking and feeling as they wrote, and received music? How did words process and transform the pure musical experience?

Through the period we find that even notions of musical absolutes depend more on language, on externals than it may have seemed. E.T.A. Hoffman holds forth on the notion of how Beethoven's *absolute* music brings us to "the spirit realm," to the place of highest human expression and meaning, though what that meaning might be remains unarticulated.²⁶² Similarly Philip Goepf makes a point of rejecting the musical crutches

²⁶⁰. Scruton, 1980, 15: 284. Scruton also feels that this use contradicts Liszt's original intent, as well its conventional critical use since.

²⁶¹ . See Said, 1991, 90, as already referenced in my chapter one.

²⁶². Hoffman, 1813. Also cf. Kerman, 1985, 65; Dahlhaus, 1989, 75. See Sadie, ed., 1988, 78-80 on the dominance of metaphorical musical commentary in the 19th century.

of liturgical or literary texts, rather moving onto pure music.²⁶³ But then in that pure, unprogrammatic place he finds, all over, musical meaning.

The first melody for instrument alone had to atone for the new lack of words, avoid the danger of "mere vacant beauty." Here begins the stir for a definite language of pure tones. And this is significant, too: none of the older forms were the achievement of music itself, its self-found utterance. They are foreign; they belonged to poetry, like the song, or to the dance, like the minuet. See, therefore, how this new sonata form is actually the first proper mode of expression of the pure art of music. *It says something in mere tones.*²⁶⁴

And what does music say? Harmony, orchestration, all further musical development was a symptom of a need to talk about the tune, in which musical talk would reside meaning. Ultimately, all musical means would combine to express "one homogeneous expression of a great emotional idea."²⁶⁵

Goepp's expression is potentially opaque, the idea potentially vague. How can we understand what music is saying to us? Goepp surmounts such challenges with a remarkable bit of musical anthropomorphizing.

And now the (musical) story really begins: the characters are described; now they act and talk; the several musical ideas are discussed, singly or together, to new surprises of climax and beauty; they take on the

²⁶³. Goepp, I, 24, 125, 174-5.

²⁶⁴. Ibid, I, 38. (Emphasis in original.) Note the similarity of Goepp's retrospective rationalizations to film's contemporaneous protesting too much about its own validity. Also here is the step that film theorists in France and the Soviet Union would soon take as they found validation in calls for and celebrations of medium specificity.

²⁶⁵. Ibid., 39.

guise often of new melodies, or melodies of kindred beauty are suggested.

Thus...the themes pass from the mere phase of lyric utterance to that of epic narrative, not without strong dramatic power.²⁶⁶

Musical ideas come together to express more than the sum of their parts. Here is some of that epic narrative.

(S)omehow, there is a little more (in Beethoven's musical descriptions) than mere chance imagery; for there is real truth in the symbolism of the moral strife of individual, of debate and dispute, drawing truth from the dregs, rising to final enlightenment. Every phase of life is here idealized...Beauty, strength, each have their figures. The moral, not the external life of man finds in music its full play and mirror. The true essence of life is in its emotions, and these play in tones as do fish in the waters. The highest problems are ethical, emotional, of experience; science is but a lesser helpmeet. In music their utterance is so real that they seem to be there themselves in the life of the tonal stream.

Given the type of pleading, of defiance, of plaint, of dim foreboding akin to objective omen, of prayerful trust, of triumphant joy,--given all these, together with the full play of dispute and strife,--and you have all the resources, unconscious and therefore the more genuine and convincing, for the utterance of man's most vital thought. So you have in

²⁶⁶. Ibid., 40.

the Fifth Symphony actually as stirring a refrain of the same high truth as in the book of Job.²⁶⁷

This long quote demonstrates the intricate musical narration that to some extent prevailed in this period. By these descriptions we see that, however absolute the music may be, the act of describing, which has to be considered part of music's discourse, is very frequently plain programmatic. Images are enlisted to explain, to contain the music, to bring it back to the realm of human comprehensibility. What the composer does not give (and in not giving he is valorized) the critic seems impelled to provide, however contradictory the provision to his absolute preferences.²⁶⁸ Examples of this phenomenon appear repeatedly throughout the period.

...Haydn's...symphonies lead us into vast green woodlands, into a merry, gaily colored throng of happy mortals. Youths and maidens float past in a circling dance; laughing children, peering out from behind the trees, from behind the rose bushes, pelt one another playfully with flowers.

And again:

...Beethoven's instrumental music opens up to us also the realm of the monstrous and the immeasurable. Burning flashes of light shoot through the deep night of this realm, and we become aware of giant shadows that

²⁶⁷. Goepp, II, xi-xii. Note Goepp's quite specific comments on the standard "meaning" of absolute symphonies. It is "an expression of a dominant feeling, from a subjective point of view, or, objectively, as a view of life, in four typical phases or moods, of which the first is of aspiring resolution, the second of pathos, the third of humor, the fourth of triumph." Goepp, I, 147; also I, 41.

²⁶⁸. As mentioned, the isolationist/absolutist's paradoxical need for descriptive language may have been one of the things that motivated Hans Keller to quit criticism.

(move) back and forth, driving us into narrower and narrower confines
until they destroy *us*...²⁶⁹

Even Liszt, prior to valorizing the programme, waxes rhapsodic in a purple paean
to the metaphorical power of absolute music.

On the towering, sounding waves of music, feeling lifts us up to heights
that lie beyond the atmosphere of our earth and shows us cloud
landscapes and world archipelagos that move about in ethereal space like
singing swans...what is it that causes ideals to shimmer before us like the
gilded spires of that submerged city, that recalls to us the indescribable
recollections that surrounded our cradles, that conducts us through the
reverberating workshops of the elements, that inspires us with all that
ardor of thirsting after inexhaustible rapture which the blissful
experience?²⁷⁰

Paul Bekker describes the theme in the closing pages of Beethoven's 32nd (and
final) piano sonata as

increasingly spiritualized, dematerialized. High notes call up a vision of
ideal unapproachable heights, the accompanying rhythms flow along,
sweeping, harp-like; high above all, a trill suggests the glitter of stars,
while among them all runs the melody like a silver thread--the thread
woven between earth and heaven by the aspiration of a great soul.²⁷¹

²⁶⁹. Hoffmann, 1813, 36-7. See also 39 for Hoffman's very programmatic description of his experience with a Beethoven trio.

²⁷⁰. Liszt, 1855, 110.

²⁷¹. Becker, Paul, 1925, Beethoven, London, J.M. Dent and Sons, 141.

And finally, Beethoven

is above putting his own personality forward in any way, and all his endeavors are directed toward a single end--that all the wonderful enchanting pictures and apparitions that the composer has sealed into his work with magic power may be called into active life, shining in a thousand colors, and that they may surround mankind in luminous sparkling circles and, enkindling its imagination, its innermost soul, may bear it in rapid flight into the faraway spirit realm of sound.²⁷²

These programmatic declarations by absolutist writers are challenging, certainly, and perhaps "impossibly broad." But they cannot be excluded from the programmatic equation. It might be added that period music has to do not only with correct instrumentation and authentic instruments, with original tone and tempo, but with the correct state of mind as well. This means that in the 19th century programme was not limited to Liszt and Berlioz. Neither need it be now.

Royal Brown observes that a distinction between "film" and "serious" music "reflects a prejudice, common in the musical community, against programme music."²⁷³ He goes on to suggest, as I have done, that even the most apparently absolute of pieces can hide some kind of programme.

In the first instance programme music was subservient to the external subject. However, as we have seen, all music can be said to have a programme or some essential external consideration, whether relating to the circumstances of composition, or of apprehension. A way around the decried subordination of music to text is the alternative

²⁷². Hoffman, 1813, 40-1.

²⁷³. Brown, 1994, 48.

possibility that music, though it need not be secondary to externals, cannot be completely understood without them. Romantic and post-Romantic writers applied a kind of after-the-fact poetic programme to music. Even more important is the application of history, and historical awareness.

Newcomb explains.

The sources of meaning brought to this interpretation (of Schumann's 2nd Symphony) would scarcely seem distant or daring to our colleagues in literary or art criticism. Yet we tend still to stay away from them in contemporary music criticism. Ludwig Finscher recently deplored...the habit, even in current musicological practice, of avoiding the interpretation of content by falling back on mere description of form, with a concomitant relegation of questions of content to the realm of the ineffable. Although the widespread timidity before the task of bringing into words the transmusical content of large, structurally demanding works is all too understandable after our experiences with common program-booklet hermeneutics..., this timidity can scarcely be allowed to define the considered behaviour of a historian toward his object of study, all the less so when the merest glance at the scores shows that formal and idiomatic peculiarities of the works cry out for an interpretation according to transmusical content.²⁷⁴

Distaste for extra-musical consideration has been an excuse for dismissing the music for which such consideration is essential. This is an unfortunate state of affairs,

²⁷⁴. Newcomb, 1984, 247-8. See also Abraham, 1985, 175-6 for Schumann's very frequent dependence on extra-musical sources in numerous other compositions.

and an unnecessary one, since far from closing down music's possibilities an expanded definition of programme increases them.

To get beyond the problem of programme music and "correct interpretations" we might consider "The Golden Years," an unproduced script by Emeric Pressburger on the last great purveyor of programme music, Richard Strauss. The central conceit of Pressburger's script was to make Strauss the camera, and to see everything, literally, from his point of view. Different lenses and lighting would suggest how perceptions changed with the passage of time.²⁷⁵ The subjectivity here suggested is intriguing, and points an essential and liberating fact: programmatic connections, especially contained within something as intractable as music, are inevitably personal, and can't be contained by limiting notions of correctness.²⁷⁶

In programme and "programme" music, then, we are dealing not only with meaning, but with the looser, more confounding (more musical) term "signification," with all the slippage and subjectivity that goes with it. Contrary to the cautiousness of the New Grove Dictionary, some musicologists like Newcomb, and film composers besides agree that whatever its ineffable essence, in practise music, even in the days of highest romanticism, meant. It continues to do so, complexly, transformed in each context, and by each listener. But the result need not be chaos. In fact there are powerful democratic implications.²⁷⁷ The resistance and even snobbery of some music scholars don't allow for another quite ancient and respectable musical function.

²⁷⁵. See MacDonald, 1994, 338, for a reference to Pressburger's project.

²⁷⁶. It is well to point out that a "personal" reading is a complex notion, inevitably subject to external pressures, often predicated on collective perceptions and the nature of the interpretive communities to which the individual belongs. For elaboration on this idea see Altman (1987) and Stefani (1987), as well as my chapter five. I hold here to the notion of personal perception to ground the musico-cinematic interpretations that will follow, which are largely my own. Though I am obviously not above the influences of ideology and community myself, my approach to classical music in film does depart somewhat from views previously expressed in both film-musical, musicological, and film theoretical communities.

²⁷⁷. I use the term "democratic" in a film-traditional, Griersonian sense. This is to say that previously underheard, underattended voices (the British working class, etc.) gain

Progressive Programme: Music and Education

It is instructive to compare classical music as it is heard today (a serious thing for the concert hall) with how it was once used (liturgically, theatrically, domestically). It is the difference between the frame and the fresco; high art absorbed separately, exaltedly versus an integrated, integral part of experience and the praxis of life. Although some have felt that programme music is emblematic of the generally appalling level of taste in the 19th century, I would argue for another important response. Programme music bridged the increasing distances between composers and listeners, between creators and receivers. We will also see that it can still do so.

In the first chapter I spoke briefly of the work of Donald Tovey, Leonard Meyer and Deryck Cooke. They sought in their writings to make erudite musical matters accessible, a project that was not appreciated by all musicians. Accessibility should depend on what is being made accessible to whom, and at what cost.

Elie Siegmeister counts among music's ancient roles the pacifying of children, the making of magic, even the facilitating of reproduction.²⁷⁸ These tasks all bespeak something primordial. Should not the music that soothes the savage breast distance itself from such elemental, pre-civilized contexts? Should it be so unrefined?

some access to the discussion, and are even able to alter the terms of that discussion. Egalitarian parallels in film/musical areas are numerous. In composition, the Vienna school had attacked tonal hierarchies and the tyranny of melody, the which attack revolutionized 20th century musical culture. (Some of the effects are traced in my chapter two.) There is also a clear paradox here; serial music, while eliminating some elemental hierarchies, was also deemed to be superlatively inaccessible and elitist. My own argument began with this idea of musical, musicological elitism, or at least insularity. "Democracy" enters the discussion as hierarchical breakdown extends beyond musicological settings into areas of reception and use. We have already discussed how increased attention to music can help to break down the traditional hierarchy of film elements (the primacy of picture and dialogue) and purposes (narrative first). Increased, disciplined musical attention also contributes to the breakdown of the traditional, still powerful subordination of the spectator to the artist.

²⁷⁸. Siegmeister, 1938, 23.

There is persistent musical attitude that suspects the popular, and the accessibility of things popular. Philip Goepp refers to "true leaders" from the classical past, and compares them with the "inevitable demagoguism" incident to democratic change.

Men appealed over the heads of those who had the true, the saner intuition to the ruder mob to whom clear thought was naught, sensational amusement all. Democratic as we must be in government, there is no doubt that the bursts of popular will throughout the nineteenth century have had a sinister effect upon art. The lower instincts with the lower classes have broken away from the higher.²⁷⁹

This declaration might sound slightly fascistic, and it is decidedly defensive. It appears that Goepp actually fears the demagogic possibilities of programme music. Given how he felt about literalism's besmirching effects, his preferred alternative comes as no surprise.

Gradually...the truth is breaking, that, while the apparent purpose is that of mere delight, *the true essence of music is its unconscious subjective betrayal of a dominant feeling*, in contrast with the conscious, objective depiction in poetry and in the plastic arts.²⁸⁰

The excesses of programme music portended seriously negative social consequences. And so there is a desire to keep music and musicians, and music lovers too, safe and separate.

²⁷⁹. Goepp, I, 16-7.

²⁸⁰. Ibid., 18, emphasis in original. It is interesting to note the same attitudes relating to the developments of early film. See Burch, 1990, especially 43-79.

But as with the case of Hans Keller or Theodor Adorno, this is not plain elitist isolationism.²⁸¹ Goepp speaks from the other, more inclusive side too, and in so doing suggests why he found *unprogrammatic* meaning everywhere. *Contra* the staunch absolutists, he felt that music must be involved in a search for moral quality.

"Impossible...as it is to sum up in systematic philosophy, nothing is so clear to the persistent and open-minded listener (than) the good and the bad, the moral and unmoral."²⁸² Later Goepp elaborates on this quality.

This (Schubert's) tenth symphony, is in every way typical, symbolic, directly eloquent of this greatest of heroic struggles, which ought to come to every man, whereby the artistic victory becomes an expression of the moral, and whereby the corresponding art-work has perhaps, as its greatest value, this stamp of ethical achievement.²⁸³

These were also the positive, empowering possibilities of programme, especially in the more multivalent, modern use of the word. Against referentialism, its resultant oversimplifications and the philistinisms that followed, Goepp wished for music, and art in general to make us better. And, though given many music critics' position on programme music it may seem paradoxical, this was one of the original reasons for programme music, too.

Although we may now think of Liszt as the arch virtuoso, and that his music is implicated by bourgeois or reactionary associations, the fact is that the music he developed was designed to reach out. Liszt himself wrote repeatedly about bringing music to the masses through subsidizing musicians, orchestras and choruses made up of

²⁸¹. For the elitist, though not completely the isolationist, see Adorno on Schoenberg (1973).

²⁸². Goepp, I, 21.

²⁸³. Ibid., 193. See also II, xvi-xviii.

regular people, through cheap music editions, etc.²⁸⁴ His wide ranging piano transcriptions of symphonic works were not always a case of simply showing off. They brought inaccessible large scale works into the parlour, some degree of high culture to those excluded from privilege. This was also the point of his programmes: to bring all art and knowledge and experience into music.

(Liszt felt) it his mission to heighten man's experience and at the same time embody it in all its manifestations--the quest for the spiritual...the ceaseless exploration in spite of loneliness and insecurity...He felt that music should embrace the world, and he cast his net as wide as possible.²⁸⁵

Programme is variously looked upon as bourgeois, as pandering, as a denial of music's rightful place and function. But it is also possible to see it as a progressive and democratic solution to the alienations of the emerging industrial age. The rise of narrative in classical music, through the agency of the 19th century programme, can be seen as an attempt to return text for/from the people to the art music that had, in being sundered from folk traditions, been taken away from them. Instead of refined aristocratic strains or heroic individualism, both of which were beyond common reach and outside of common experience, programme was at least partly designed as something unspecialized, unprivileged and accessible.²⁸⁶

²⁸⁴. Siegmeister, 1936, 48-9.

²⁸⁵. Searle, 1985, 320.

²⁸⁶. Cf. Merrick, Paul, 1987, Revolution and religion in the music of Liszt, Cambridge, Cambridge University Press. Merrick traces the ways in which Liszt's programmes were far from mere fancy, but were always serious expressions of his beliefs and his involvement in the real world. In this light programme music emerges as more than an irrelevant anomaly. It is allied in intent, and to a degree in result with the democratizing musical impulses of Ralph Vaughan Williams (1934), Sabine Baring-Gould (1895-6), Cecil Sharp (1912-1922, Country Dance Tunes, London, Novello), etc.

It was one of the sentiments of the age that art, and in the present instance music, was for healing and education,²⁸⁷ truth and beauty. But these were not to be vaguely edifying abstractions. What was required was that truth and beauty bear fruit in action or improvement. Why was the programme important? Why does it remain so?

Hegel, in his Aesthetics, makes an essential point. The *connoisseur* is able to comprehend and appreciate music in a sophisticated and rarified way. This kind of enjoyment is not available to the layman, but this does not mean that the layman should be left to (and derided for) his own musical devices. The laity has the right to its own enjoyment.

So complete an absorption is seldom the privilege of the amateur, to whom there comes at once a desire to fill out this apparently meaningless outpour of sound and to find intellectual footholds for its progress and, in general, more definite ideas and a more precise content for that which penetrates into his soul. In this respect, music becomes symbolic for him, yet, in his attempts to overtake its meaning, he is confronted by abstruse problems, rapidly rushing by, which do not always lend themselves to solution and which are altogether capable of the most varied interpretations.²⁸⁸

The layman's solution? Programme. Liszt affirms that communication is the job of art, which means that the assistance rendered by programmatic forms does not diminish artistry. It makes artistry possible. "A work which offers only clever manipulation of its materials will always lay claim to the interest of the immediately concerned--of the artist, student, *connoisseur*--but, despite this, it will be unable to cross

²⁸⁷. Siegmeister, 1936, 23.

²⁸⁸. In Liszt, 1855, 120. See Hegel, 1920, III, 424-5 for another, more convoluted

the threshold of the artistic kingdom."²⁸⁹ So Liszt, only partly rationalizing his chosen approach, derides musical professionals as cold formalists whose work is inaccessible to non-initiates, and lifeless to all.²⁹⁰

Tovey, Meyer and Cooke are sympathetic, and in some degree criticism of their work, from elite corners anyway, might be an affirmation. Tovey was a composer and concert pianist, but felt at last that his most important role was as an educator. He disliked musicological aridities, and did not proclaim himself a scholar. His most noted writings (Tovey, 1937) were originally prepared as programme notes for a long standing, public prescription Edinburgh concert series. He felt that popularizing was precisely his duty.²⁹¹

Leonard Meyer's MA was in music, but his PhD studies were in the history of culture. As this would indicate, his interest has been in music contextualized, and not isolated from the conditions of its creation and distribution. Emotion and Meaning in Music (1956) repeatedly, and not hierarchically, distinguishes between musician and lay experience, implying the essentialness of production *and* reception, whatever their nature.²⁹²

Cooke's Language of Music (1959) is remembered for suggesting that music is an indirect but real expression of a composer's emotions. Cooke posited equivalencies between words and musical phrases, and was not always clear about whether music meant conventionally (extrinsically) or naturally (inherently). But, though roundly criticized²⁹³, Cooke's transgressions, and the perceived shortcomings of these other writers besides, must be seen in the light of what they intended.

translation.

²⁸⁹. Liszt, 1855, 121. Liszt undercuts his egalitarian declarations when he locates the programme within the unusual sensibilities of "great hearts," which understand in a finer and more refined fashion than the "plain man." Ibid., 126.

²⁹⁰. Ibid., 130.

²⁹¹. On Tovey see Sadie, ed., 1980, 19: 102-03.

²⁹². On Meyer see Ibid., 12: 244-5.

²⁹³. Monelle, 1992.

For more than twenty years Cooke had responsibility in music presentation at the BBC. He can be seen as a vulgarizer, but given the 3rd program's breadth and ambition, its conscious connection (through the Proms and numerous other innovations) with Music for the People²⁹⁴ and other such democratizing movements, it seems more kind, and accurate besides, to call him a popularizer. Or, better yet, a teacher.

Leonard Bernstein speaks for the currency of all of these concepts. He talks about the relevance, the essentialness of discussing musical meaning.

I as a musician feel that there has to be a way of speaking about music with intelligent but nonprofessional music lovers who don't know a stretto from a diminished fifth; and the best way I have found so far is by setting up a working analogy with language, since language is something everyone shares and uses and knows about.²⁹⁵

This was, and remains the rationale behind programme music. Bernstein uses words to preach the gospel of edifying music, thus bringing light to the musically darkened. In this sense programme becomes an agent of equality, as it establishes common terms on which initiates and neophytes alike can meet.

But as Goepp suggested, sometimes talk of democracy can merely signal the rising of the rabble. The perceived limitation of programme was that it nailed down the ineffable by prosaic equivalencies. The process suggested a kind of dread medium

²⁹⁴. Discussed thoroughly in Russell, 1987.

²⁹⁵. Bernstein, 1976, 53. There is a potential problem attached to this notion of art communicating, and Bernstein's implied equation of communication and verbalization. As Goepp suggests, egalitarian communication can become a diminished, even depraved thing. Not all communications, particularly when they are musical, are so easily reduced to the verbal. (ie. the elusive musical narratives of Wagner, Strauss, Schoenberg, Berg; Scruton's valid concerns about reductive programme discussions, and of music's resistance to reductive interpretation.) The mixing of media, the interpretations that accrue to this mixing, are inevitably problematic. For a discussion on this problematic, see my section on "indeterminacy" in chapter five.

crossing counterpoint. The prosaic mind, by means of the prosaic sentence, took the poetry of the musical phrase and, through literal means, translated it again into prose. Here, many felt, was a prescription for philistinism.

But that was just one view. Could not programme also be seen as an Aristotelian transformation, by which the familiar was made fresh and new? And if the material is not familiar then there is, at least, communication.

The significance of these ideas to classical music in film are obvious. The criticisms cited in my first three chapters are still important, but the receptive transformation I have just suggested also allows for a complete and salutary reversal of attitude.

(T)he borrowing or symbiotic exchange between the fine, popular, and folk arts has indeed been beneficial for American culture as a whole by broadening the exposure of every aesthetic level, encouraging many to seek out and experience the original forms, and making some headway in breaking down the class barriers that are inherent in the social predilection for stratifying art and culture.²⁹⁶

Exception was not always taken to accessible music. Schubert wrote music that his friends, and he himself could play. Chopin's etudes, which have become the property of virtuosi, were written as studies for amateurs.²⁹⁷ Before Paganini (the 1820s), music was, allowing for certain social inaccessibilities, for all. The rise of the concert hall (and the end of patronage, and the necessity for the artist to make himself distinct and thus make his financial way, etc.) took music out of amateur's hand.²⁹⁸

²⁹⁶. Edgerton, 1988, 4.

²⁹⁷. Temperley, 1985, 18.

²⁹⁸. Cf. Subotnik, 1976.

The record is not complete without this contextualization. In reaction to art's separating itself from the people came the rise of the concept of extrinsic meaning in music, of the programme. This meant ideally a continuation and expansion of listener engagement, and the possibility that not everyone would be shut out. However this need not have meant the takeover of the low-brows. Practically all of Berlioz is connected to specific extra-musical meaning, without an awareness of which comprehension, and enjoyment, are incomplete. But there is still the possibility, the necessity of musical listening. Prosaic elements did not necessarily eliminate poetry.

In connection it is too often forgotten that, though programmes were expressed in non-musical language, its language sources were very frequently poetic. Newman points out that pre-romantic composers were practically indentured servants, with little opportunity for extra-musical accomplishment. In contrast, many 19th musical figures were extraordinarily cultured, intimately aware of the intellectual and artistic life of the time. They brought that awareness to their compositions, which were not only expressions of inner feeling, but expressions of a desire to share and to teach.²⁹⁹

If programme music constituted a diminishment of musical feeling, then there were still great compensations. Music, though a handmaid, introduced listeners to varieties of great feeling from other discourses and contexts. In this way it actually countered the potential insularity--and certainly the later elitism--of absolute approaches. And, since preparation and synthesis were required to properly read the programme,

²⁹⁹. Newman, 1905, 137-141. Hegel (1920, III 425), speaking of pre-romantic composers, says that although they may have shown a great musical gift at an early age, that otherwise they "remain their life long men of the poorest and most impoverished intellectual faculty in other directions." (See also Eisler, 1947, 46-7; also Bazelon, 1975, 20, on similar circumstances of Hollywood composers.) This situation is in marked contrast to Mendelssohn, who globe trotted and was a friend of the cultured famous, to the voraciously literate Schumann (Abraham, 1985, 101) and the even more broadly cultured Liszt (Searle, 1985, 241). In fact, Liszt also developed a literary reputation, and one of his earliest subjects was the need for the artist to leave his "superior servant" status and be accepted as a respected member of the community. Ibid., 243. It could be said that Eisenstein and Vertov and the general progressive notion of the unalienated revolutionary artist descend directly from this programmatic place.

since the listener had to work, the possibility of progress and empowerment far exceeded the dangers of philistinism.³⁰⁰

This is the situation in the 19th century, or at least one possible rendering of the situation. Words, which mean and are understood, added to music, which expresses and stimulates our higher feelings, add up to edification and understanding and union.³⁰¹ This can still be true, and even more than was contemplated in the original discussions. The words are not just Liszt's authorized, authorizing ones. They are critical, analytical, historical, theoretical, instinctual. Music communicates, and we communicate about it.

In this summary the terms, possibilities, and complications seem to multiply. In the next chapter, then, I will apply the analogies (montage, counterpoint and programme) to specific instances, through which we will see how these figurative notions can be practically and specifically applied to understanding and enjoying classical music in film.

³⁰⁰. See Newman, 1910, 157-179 for a convincing discussion of programme music's progressive potential.

³⁰¹. For musical and musical dramatic expressions of these aspirations, see Beethoven's 9th Symphony, Wagner's *Die Meistersinger*, or *Parsifal*.

CHAPTER FIVE

INTERPRETING CLASSICAL MUSIC IN FILM

In the last chapter I suggested that musical and extra-musical programmes are everywhere, whether explicit or effaced, intended or apprehended. Programme extends far beyond Berlioz, if we are willing to expand our definition. In the first instance, programme composers attached something external to the music which was to aid and direct experience and interpretation. But programmes do not end at, and are not limited to authorial intent. We have discussed how this form can bring in the spectator. As 19th century composer and historian François Fétis observed: "(t)he large audience...will never listen to a symphony, quartet, or other composition of this order without outlining a program *for itself* during the performance, according to the grandiose, lively, impetuous, serenely soothing, or melancholy character of the music."³⁰²

Fétis extends the site of programmatic creation, and this extension will be the focus of this chapter. I have suggested that meaning in music (not to mention feeling, or affect) comes not through musical/verbal correspondence (a word = a note, a phrase = a phrase), but through series of multivalent and multifarious juxtapositions. Now I wish to develop the idea that these things come not only from the composer, but also through listener transformation of musical material into some verbal or conceptual or even sensuous analogue. This is, if you will, intellectual, overtonal, even emotional montage. Nineteenth century, and nineteenth century-derived absolutists resist the notion, but their transposition of music through criticism (and the imagery used therein) to words and responses testifies to the power and universality of the process.

This is how I wish to situate classical music in film. Liszt pointed out how programme music can "by defining its subject draw new and undreamed of advantages from the approximation of certain ideas, the affinity of certain figures, the separation or

combination, juxtaposition or fusion of certain poetic images and perorations."³⁰³ Liszt's description really applies to all music. Films just make us notice.

It is now time to set forth practical applications of the ideas we have been discussing. How can we deal with an intellectual and overtone montage based on the principles of musical counterpoint, always remembering that collisions and intertwinings are fueled and informed by broader programmatic contexts? What typology, or classification of uses can we establish to help navigate through different montage equations?

The first question to arise is that of audience. Who apprehends the montage synthesis, plots contrapuntal relationships, sets or receives the programmatic setting? Who is watching, hearing, interpreting, even misreading? Janet Staiger, drawing on literary models, identifies a number of possible readers for texts in general. I will say something about the authorial reader and the narratee in my discussions of intention and phenomenology. But over these descriptions of position Staiger emphasizes the *quality* of that reading. Ideal, coherent, competent readers, even misreaders are helpful in understanding the relationship between text and audience.³⁰⁴

All of these sites suggest rich possibilities, and deserve close attention. But in terms of this particular work, especially given that it seeks to establish the terms of a discussion that is largely new, I will state explicitly that this is not a study of reception

³⁰². Quoted in Liszt, 1855, 128. Emphasis added.

³⁰³. Liszt, 1855, 124.

³⁰⁴. Staiger, 1992, 24-34. Staiger emphasizes the conventional nature of these definitions, and the implied readings behind them. An ideal reader, as defined by the likes of Johnson, Dryden, Coleridge and Frye, is a useful conceit, a construct addressing how the theorist feels we should interact with a text. Staiger points out the implication behind the concept, which is that there are ideal *readings*, interpretations of and responses to a text that imply a kind of rationality and order that are not necessarily in critical fashion now. Similarly, coherent readers suggest that the text and response are, if not absolute, then at least containable, and subject to substantial agreements on meaning and implied action. Competence steps down a bit from amiable coherence, but its implied existence of incompetence still affirms the existence of preferable readings. Misreading, which suggests plain error in an ideal setting, becomes much richer and more interesting in a post-deconstructive world.

theory, and that I do not wish to establish the effects of classical music use in film on any particular class or group of spectators. Nor do I claim any absolute authority for my responses, though they are hard-thought, and aspire to a kind of coherence, and all that it implies. At the same time I am open to the implications of slippage and the interest of misreading (see brief discussion on “bracketing” in my phenomenology section). Though I intend no howling inaccuracies, they may well appear, doubtless illustrating certain helpful points, and requiring no apology. Regardless, it should be noted that I am the audience, and the site of an experiment on the points that I have posited. My work on this subject should justify and substantiate certain conclusions, while my shortcomings should provide helpful cautions in their own right.

Now, then, how should I proceed with this self-experiment? We have seen that one standard set of film-music categories, that of parallelism and counterpoint (as traditionally defined), is not really adequate to the complexities of film music, especially when we consider programmes incident to classical forms. (Extensions and elaborations of these poles have been suggested already, and will be further defined in the following pages.) Neither are traditional distinctions between diegetic and non-diegetic sound up to the elusive reality of much practice.

Ken Russell's 1968 biopic about Frederic Delius, Song of Summer, demonstrates some of the complexities of film-musical voice, as well as some of the difficulties, and perhaps irrelevancies of the diegetic/non-diegetic split. Young Mr. Fenby, the character through whom we witness the story, has just arrived in France to help the crippled Delius, and is introduced by Mrs. Delius to the household. "This is the music room, where Delius has written all his finest music." Music, a composition by Delius, now rises up on the soundtrack as the young man explores the room. What is its source and meaning?

There are several questions, and several possibilities: is the music an echo emanating from the room's walls, representing Delius' work in the room, or is it an

arbitrary external effluence added by the filmmakers for our benefit? Is the music from Fenby's aural point of view, or the wife's? Are they hearing it in their heads? (On a gramophone?) Does it represent Fenby's relation to the fame of its composer, or the new circumstances that are now inflecting that relation? Does this lyrical burst represent Mrs. Delius' perception of her husband's artistry, or given the complications of character and marital relations that are soon to be portrayed, is it an ironic statement about the gaps between talent and the lives of the talented, between ideals and the real? Each possibility is intriguing, and none eliminates any of the others. The film itself doesn't answer these questions, nor does it seem to have a need to.

As the discussions of Michel Chion and Claudia Gorbman have demonstrated, conventional diegetic discussions cannot really address film music's ability to permeate different narrative spaces, or account for the complexity of quotation, motivation (the source of the musical interpolation, whether a character's action, an implied or explicit editorial from a narrator, or the author, etc.), subjectivity or irony in source music. I find Gorbman's metadiagetic formulation to be most useful, especially in this critical context. As she suggests, inside and outside, text and intertext, sound and picture are mutually implicated, the result of that implication being a rich, swirling "combinatoire of expression."³⁰⁵ As I proceed and interpret on a case-by-case, issue-by-issue basis, I will continue to be open to the permeable, multi-valent nature of musical placement and signification.

Still, the task of scholarly inquiry is not just to admire impressionistic swirls, but to make at least some attempt at definition and understanding. This can be accomplished in the area of film music's multifarious programmes. Programmatic sites can be plotted along a kind of interpretive spectrum, where environments of intention and reception, author and audience, order and accident are all acknowledged. Once again, Janet Staiger provides a helpful discussion of these receptive and interpretive settings. In her book

Interpreting Films, Staiger enumerates the function and interrelationship of text, reader and context activated theories as applicable to films in general. What did the author intend in her creation of a text? What does the work contain that may not have been intended, but which nevertheless exists and must be accounted for? What is the experience of the person receiving the work, with all of his insights and blind spots? What are the contexts of history and society, which pre-exist and exceed the efforts of textual participants, and which form the ground upon which textual exchanges take place?³⁰⁶ The structure of this chapter traces a similar trajectory, with adjustments made for musical conditions. Each of these factors inflect the musico-visual equation, and will be investigated here.³⁰⁷

Here, it is hoped, are some clear categories with which we can proceed. In this last section of the dissertation I will apply these general tools and sensibilities to specific contexts, and to specific texts. Here we will consider interpretation as it relates to creative intent and creative reception, not to mention unwitting creation and viewing. I will discuss the place of indeterminacy, and suggest how and when interpretation should give way to a kind of neo-formalist explication.

This chapter summarizes and expands upon what I feel to be the most pertinent interpretive issues and settings relating to classical music in film. For the sake of clarity, I will include brief examples of film/music equations which illustrate said issues. The illustrations are not intended to be exhaustive. As in my first chapter, when I surveyed a wide array of critical responses to this musical usage (pugilistic prescription, textual

³⁰⁵. In Gorbman, 1987, 15-6, 20-26.

³⁰⁶. See Staiger, 1992, 34-48.

³⁰⁷. For a helpful discussion on “programme” (pre-text, context) in another setting, see Heinrich Plett’s Intertextuality: Research in Text Theory, (1991, Berlin, Walter de Gruyter and Co.), which provides a set of tools and terms in the area of literary quotation. Plett considers the quality (surface structure giving way to deep structure), distribution (textual placement, whether temporal or spatial), frequency, interference (alienating incongruity) and marking (explicit isolation) of quotations. His discussion of perceptual modes and stages is also analogous to the concepts in question in my own study. I am indebted to Donna Poulton for introducing me to Plett’s valuable work.

emphasis and neo-formalism, historical description and aggressive interpretation, and finally a proving and holding of the most useful of all these alternatives), the scope here is broad; it is hoped that my survey, and even the small readings attached, will provide some tools that will facilitate others in the more detailed explorations that should follow.

Interpretive Strategies: Intentionality

Irene Atkins writes that "(t)he elements of a specific source-music sequence or scene having been determined, the historian or critic can then approach an analysis of the music and the scene in terms of the filmmaker's rationale and the ways in which he uses music to communicate with the audience."³⁰⁸ Although our critical responses need not be predicated solely on artistic intent, Atkins is right in emphasizing the filmmaker's rationale, especially when his or her musical choices are clearly conscious. Valuable interpretations can derive from these understandings. There are many examples of this kind.

In Sally Potter's remarkable Thriller (1979) Puccini's *La Boheme* is played, both narratively and musically, against Bernard Hermann's music to Hitchcock's Psycho. The film's argument is set up, discursively, patiently, convincingly, on the disjunction between the music sources: romantic strains and jarring screeches are revealed as diverse expression of the same impulse, of doing violence to women.

In Jean Luc Godard's Scenario du Film Passion (1982) he explains his use in Passion (also 1982) of some "magnificent romantic music, this little-known Dvorak piano concerto. Perhaps it will help me see, and say, that there is romance in labour." Godard confirms that, in at least some cases, musical selections are made for what they represent, and not just for accompaniment. In this case the cue is chosen because of its

³⁰⁸. Atkins, 1983, 26.

idiom. Dvorak aside, we don't understand part of the film if we don't identify that idiom.³⁰⁹

One of the powerful effects of idiomatic selection and identification is the kind of epochal confluences--the time of composition bound to the time of quotation--they effect. John Addison speaks of his score for Tom Jones (1963). "The film opened with a sequence in silent film style, for which I used the very simple device of a harpsichord to represent the eighteenth century and a slightly out of tune piano to denote the silent movie element."³¹⁰

Here traditional forms, or forms associated with tradition (the harpsichord and the 18th century), support the film-modernist rendering of an iconoclastic narrative. "Though it was the eighteenth century which 'swung' on the screen, there was a dimension of audacity, style and high spirits relevant to the scene that was taking shape in contemporary London."³¹¹ In this sense Tom Jones' period elements become a kind of subversive disguise. Along with Billy Liar's fantasies and A Hard Day's Night's release in youth and rock culture, the Richardson/Osborne film provides an escape from the dead end of kitchen sink drear, to the brief hip utopia of new moralities, swinging London and the free 1960s. And all this is signaled by a simple baroque pastiche at the film's opening.

What we have observed is all in the film, but is that all there is? To stop here with our Tom Jones reading, as many have, is to stop too soon. The film's formal alienations--direct address, jarring shifts in tone, the ironic and distancing narration--are unusual for its time, but they actually correspond to the formal strategies of Fielding's original novel,

³⁰⁹. Irvin Bazelon raises an idiomatic concern as he considers what he feels to be the unequal partnership between the concert piece and the film in which it appears. "With this conjugal arrangement, the piece itself loses importance: only the music's ability to convey a mood or an association has any validity. The result is that distinct, individual pieces become pastiches, 'Bachlike or Chopinesque,' with distinctions simply disappearing." Here Bazelon suggests that idiom only has meaning *through* its individual expressions. Bazelon, 1975, 134-5.

³¹⁰. Thomas, 1979, 204.

and of the period in general, where enclosed 19th century narratives (and a reading of any Dickens book, for instance, problematizes that myth as well) were not yet codified. John Addison's reference to 18th century/silent film music suggests an important feature of the film. Its most striking accomplishment is that it brings us into contact with other discourses and other discursive strategies of the originating period, effecting a kind of interdisciplinary (literature, music, film [not to mention Hoggarth, etc.]) unity. And a similar unity accrues beyond the texts, as apparatus-revealing techniques underline connections between life and the human condition in 1749 and 1963 both. Since the arts, in addition to providing critical insight and fostering debate, also illuminate things that we hold dear and have in common, then Addison's musical conflation reveals more than just two Londons swinging. Comparing the two Tom Jones together we see that not only naughtiness, but kindness, not just transgression but reconciliation too, affirm cultural and continuity and human nobility.³¹² And again, in the film, it is the simple, elegant use of musical idiom by which all this is accomplished.

These last cues and references are featured in the foreground, but it is also possible for conventionally effaced, mechanically functioning pieces, when carefully chosen, to resonate very dramatically. Early in John Schlesinger's Sunday, Bloody Sunday (1971) we see a wealthy physician played by Peter Finch, alone in his tasteful and well appointed townhouse listening to Mozart. At this point the music simply suggests a certain level of culture and education. But as the film continues this first diegetic cue will continue non-diegetically, over and across a number of different situations, eventually not only covering the physical joins but uniting the seemingly irreconcilable narrative threads in the story.

The cue is the final trio, "*Soave sia il vento*," from Act I of *Così fan tutte*. On the surface this opera is a comedy about female infidelity, as the male leads test and trick

³¹¹. In Walker, Alexander, 1974, Hollywood, England, London, Michael Joseph, 145.

³¹². Another noted example of this kind of effect occurs in Laurence Olivier's conflating

their fiancées into compromising themselves, or at least being willing to do so. But here the sexual play leaves illusions in ruin and characters broken. All, tricking and tricked, are chastened finally, aware of limitations and frailties, the strong imperatives of sexuality, and the need for mercy and reconciliation.

In Schlesinger's film it is not woman's infidelity but that of a bi-sexual man, played by Murray Head, who casually deceives and betrays both the Finch character and his rival, played by Glenda Jackson. For all the daring of this skewed triangle, and for the attention the film gained upon release, the point of the film would not seem to be plain provocation or gender bending. Rather it would affirm universal challenges which, the film suggests--*cosi fan tutte* is roughly translated as "that's what they all do"--so surpass mere sexual preference as to make it irrelevant.

The Mozart seems at first to be associated with the Finch character, but as we hear it in relation to events concerning all three principles and as it crosses scenic transitions between all three, it is clear that it is not Finch, but what he feels that the music addresses. The opera's farewell trio begs "may the wind be gentle, may the sea be calm, and may the elements respond kindly to our wishes" ("*ai nostri desir*"). This is a sweet expression of romantic yearning, innocent and kindly, and occurring just before all manner of disillusioning complications in the story. But it is the trio's sentiments that still prevail for all that follows. It is so too in the film where the musical trio's beauty is designed to unite the seemingly shocking, seemingly disparate narrative strands. Yearning, aching, shortcoming are shared by all, as well as the promise and hope for something better. *Cosi Fan Tutte* has a mixed history, and is generally less admired than the other Mozart/Da Ponte operas. But its "failure to accord with the 19th century's heroic notions about ideal womanhood is not a flaw in the opera but a commentary on the limitations of those notions."³¹³ Beyond its mechanical and narrative functions in the

version of Henry V (1944).

³¹³. Sadie, Stanley, from the program notes for the London, *L'Oiseau-Lyre* recording.

film, Mozart's music brings those original issues to bear on the film and its contemporary reception.

The specificity of these cues, and the specificity of their identification are very important. They may add to affective response interrogation and even knowledge, so that feeling and thought can profitably co-exist. In clear examples such as these we see that intent is an important part of understanding some uses of classical music in film. But intent is often more difficult to ascribe than in these instances. In terms of what an artist means to communicate, there are a number of possibilities to consider.

It seems clear that some classical music choices are fairly casual, and the associations they are expected to summon are fairly rudimentary. For instance there are cues chosen not for the implications of the particular work, or of its composer, but simply to signify "classical" or serious music. Classical music has been offhandedly and shorthandedly used to evoke class, culture, accomplishment, and a multitude of relations to same. In many cases articulation beyond that is neither intended nor expected.³¹⁴

Royal Brown suggests that the use of music in relation to a narrative is not usually specific, or specifically meaningful, but rather mythical.³¹⁵ In Alfred Hitchcock's Vertigo (1958) a cue generally identified as being composed by Mozart and written in the script as being by Vivaldi, is in fact an obscure Sinfonia by JC Bach. Johann Christian may be, as Brown says, "the very embodiment of a rationalized art"³¹⁶, but in terms of the film Bach and his rationalism are probably beyond the mark, at least as set by whoever chose the music. It is more likely just a classical period counter to the roiling psychoses of the narrative and the dark post-romanticisms of Bernard Hermann's score.

1985, 414 316-2 OH3, page 22.

³¹⁴. Still, that further articulation can still be justified and valuable. See following section on phenomenology.

³¹⁵. Brown, 1994, 9.

Another kind of shorthand is not keyed on a particular idiom, but on a specific composer, or on a specific piece. For example, just as in many films the twenty-third Psalm has been used to suggest a kind of general plain piety³¹⁷, so too has the music of J.S. Bach appeared as an echo of past devotions, and of the assurances that justified them. Occasionally the quote will have very specific connotations, as when in Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde (1932) we are introduced to the virtuous Doctor as he plays a chorale tune on the organ.³¹⁸ To suggest the victorious alter-ego, as well as the more dominant, horrific associations that the story evokes in the viewer, the opening and closing titles offer as counter the secular tones of Bach's *Toccatina and Fugue in D minor*.³¹⁹ Similarly, it is the religious nature of the *St. Matthew's Passion* that allows its closing chorale to frame and then (apparently) redeem the naturalisms of Pasolini's Accatone (1961)/Scorcese's Casino (1995).³²⁰

More frequently the outlines are rough and general. Ingmar Bergman doesn't distinguish between the secular and sacred Bach, as the entire *oeuvre* signifies for him an unalienated plenitude.³²¹ A great many films have used Bach's *Air* from the third orchestral suite to suggest precisely this loose (and sometimes sloppy) musical religiousness.³²²

In these instances it seems that, rather than discussing what an individual artist meant to have happen, it would be more advantageous to discuss some of the following

³¹⁶. Ibid., 82.

³¹⁷. The Kordas' Rembrandt (1937), How Green Was My Valley (1941), even Luis Buñuel's The Adventures of Robinson Crusoe (1953).

³¹⁸. *Ich ruf zu dir, Herr Jesu Christ*, BWV 639.

³¹⁹. Cf. The Black Cat (Edward G. Ulmer, 1934).

³²⁰. Scorcese's use of Bach is clearly an homage to the earlier film, as well as an effective device to import wholesale its various themes and associations. Note also the use of the same piece at the conclusion of George Lucas' THX 1138 (1971).

³²¹. Bergman quotes the legendarily singleminded Bach, who means devotion regardless of musical form and context, and who stands in contrast to the author's modern(ist) fragmentation. See Bergman, 1988, 43, 281-2. For the superlative work-specific use of Bach see Straub/Huillet's The Chronicle of Anna Magdalena Bach (1968).

³²². Cf. the last moment of order before the descent into the absurd in Martin Scorcese's After Hours (1986), or an easy irony achieved amidst the urban squalor of Seven (1995).

points. How does classical music function as part of a cultural shorthand? How do intercontinental (Europe to Hollywood) and cross-temporal (Baroque, Classical, Romantic periods into the popular present) connections or disjunctions affect musical appropriations? What are some of the levels of musical engagement and choice in industrial filmmaking contests? How can the actual instance of musical use sometimes exceed its anticipated intent?

Twenty-third Psalm-quoters may not have any particular familiarity with or sympathy for the pious sentiments they plug into, nor do a great number of classical music cues hold a very studied or substantial relation to their borrowed culture. There is a *Hooked-on-Classics* cynicism and superficiality in many instances as, like the immemorial Hollywood movie, the music is reduced and contained and vacuumed and packaged for the undiscerning masses.³²³

Still, intended and/or not, wonderful and artful things still emerge from seeming superficiality. In Michael Powell and Emeric Pressburger's *A Canterbury Tale* (1944), the climax occurs as one of the characters, a bitter cinema organist, plays Bach's D minor *Toccata and Fugue* in the Canterbury cathedral. This piece and its formal structure have no liturgical function, but again as Bach has come to mean holiness, even the Toccata becomes a signifier of grace.³²⁴ That grace is here expressed through the most famous composition in the organ repertoire. Though the choice of the familiar piece sacrifices elegance for lay comprehensibility, it still provides apt and meaningful accompaniment for the series of semi-secular (and beautifully cinematic) miracles that it accompanies.

Many classical quotes then are quite casually motivated, and still quite if casually meaningful. However, this is not always so. We have seen how many have held that any familiar composition is cinematically unassimilatable, and is therefore bad film music. The general argument is that the tune takes over the whole, and does not make much

³²³. *Opera Goes to the Movies*, etc.

³²⁴. See Westermeyer, Paul, 1985, "Grace and the music of Bach," *The Christian*

sense in doing so. It is perhaps for this reason that references to source music frequently neglect to name the actual source (either composer, or actual title and opus number). This is not so serious with regard to the generalist quotations just cited. But as we consider artists' motives we should remember that there are instances where cues are very carefully chosen for specific connotative purposes. In these cases it is only through identification that the connotations properly resonate.

Again, examples abound. Mussorgsky's *Night on Bald Mountain* reinforces macabre elements in MGM's Wizard of Oz (1939). Mendelssohn's *Midsummernight's Dream* material (not to mention the credited Delius) enrich and expand the nature's raptures of The Yearling (1948). Mahler's 5th symphony *Adagietto* from Visconti's Death in Venice formally underpins the cutting and treatment of the sequences in which it is heard, but it also confirms the connection between Thomas Mann's protagonist Aschenbach and Mahler (star Dirk Bogarde is made up to resemble the composer), deepening the story's connections with Romanticism's apotheosis and demise, with an obsessive and sickly beauty on the brink of the 20th century.

Elsewhere, very specific choices have very specific, and far reaching ramifications. In Luchino Visconti's Ossessione (1942) the adulterous protagonists have a chance reunion at a fair; they, along with the wronged husband, enter into a singing contest where a soprano sings the *Habañera* from the first act of Bizet's *Carmen*. In the opera this is the piece by which we are introduced to the fickle, headstrong Carmen. In the film this quote bespeaks carnality, abandon and, if we will, tragedy.

Following the Bizet selection the cuckolded husband rises, and sings a baritone aria from *La Traviata*.³²⁵ In the opera this aria is sung by Germont, the father of the rather headstrong, headlong Alfredo. He asks where his son's customary joy has gone, assures him that present imbalances will pass and that contentment will return. Does this

Century, vol. 102: 291-94.

³²⁵. *Di Provenza il mar, il suol*, from *La Traviata*, act 2, scene 1.

selection not subtly shift the story? Where before we've seen, or from narrative stereotypes think we've seen a brutish oblivious husband and his bruised flower of a wife, who very naturally and properly craves more tender attention, we must now factor in the provocative declarations from an infamous hussy, countered by the well-meaning appeal of a firm but loving older man who feels kindly toward youth, wishing only to help it avert its follies. Intertextuality, if we attend to it, generates sympathy for the older generation, which may not fully understand youthful passion, but which is suddenly not all bad.

Visconti's quotes signify beyond the narrative itself. Sweaty, boorish, uneducated Signor Bragana's familiarity with Verdi's high culture text at least problematizes the universality of the notion that serious music is the property of privilege.³²⁶ And/or it becomes a point of convergence where the auteur's aristocratic background and socialistic inclinations meet, where is contained the paradox of the opera director/neo-realist. It also explains Visconti's not so strange interest in this apparently American pulp fiction (*Ossessione* was notoriously cribbed from James Cain's *The Postman Always Rings Twice*), an idiom much like that other font of raging passion and melodramatic excess, Italian opera.³²⁷

³²⁶. In Visconti's *La Terra Trema* (1947), a group of drunken and unemployed barflies dance through the streets of a backward Sicilian village, while one of their number plays Chopin's E major *Etude* (opus 10) on a harmonica.

³²⁷. See and hear also the use of very specific Wagner compositions in Claude Chabrol's *Les Cousins* (1959). Attentive viewers can ascertain not only character relationships, but the conclusion of the story from identifying and connecting the cues. Substantial significations are not limited to the international art cinema, or to the activities of its *auteurs*. In MGM's *The Picture of Dorian Grey* (1945) Dorian has deflowered and driven to despair a young singer. After hearing of her suicide he attends a performance of Mozart's *Don Giovanni*. Soon after he casually whistles the tune from the "seduction duet" between Don Giovanni and Zerlina. Dorian's virtuous painter friend counters by playing on the piano a simple song associated with the dead girl. Here, through classical quotation, is an indication of Dorian's character and motivation, as well as a foreshadowing of his end. In the film we have, as in Wilde's book and Mozart/Da Ponte's opera, a cruelly carefree character who misses the foreboding in the apparently bright tones that surround him. For another significant, intentional use of this same duet, see Gabriel Axel's adaptation of Isak Dinesen's *Babette's Feast* (1986).

These then are authorial programmes, specific choices that lead to important chains of association. The level of specificity is important. A loose idiomatic identification--that sounds like classical music--will lead to a particular response; the more particular the identification, the more complex and interesting the effects that can be traced.³²⁸

After Intention: Pragmatism, Obscurity, Inadequacy

Work specific considerations can, of course, have elitist implications, as a certain amount of experience and sophistication are required to negotiate these intertextual byways. This is one reason that artist-first interpretive approaches are not always sufficient. Furthermore, as we move from the artists' programme to that surrounding a spectator's interpretation and experience, we encounter instances where authorial autonomy breaks down, and where his or her intent becomes less important. Proper appreciation of musical uses in these instances depends on an awareness of the following: purely practical motivations, very personal and even idiosyncratic (uncommunicatable) musical choices, and the possibility of unconscious, accidental or even inept selection.

Musical quotation often has fairly iterative motivations. In these cases it is not so much creativity as the mundanely practical that leads to certain musical uses. This circumstance applies to specific films, and even to dominant patterns of use during certain periods.

³²⁸. Atkins lists under "Concert ('Classical' or 'Serious') Music" the following: large orchestral works, chamber music, virtuoso solo instrumental works, choral music, opera, ballet, art songs and lieder. (1983, 26.) She leaves it at that, but in fact each category has its own specific periods, its received culture and celebrated proponents, its own associations and repercussions, all of which substantially alter the contexts (cinematic, in this case) in which they occur. One might profitably trace the cinematic appropriations and significations in each of these very specific musical areas. Of course it is also true that this work is not always done, and that there can be elitist implications to opus-level identifications. (Cf. Stefani, 1987.) The following sections investigate these implications, and some alternatives.

The use of classical music in the silent cinema illustrates this latter point. A 1917 decision in the US Supreme Court granted composers royalties for public performances. Charles Berg suggests that this decision led to a further dependence on public domain compositions from the standard repertoire. Since public performance of compositions by living composers would now force studios and theatres to pay for the privilege, the classics now emerged as the most economical business option. Whatever serendipitous meanings might arise from the silent period juxtaposition of a film and a particular piece of music, at least as important is the fact that the latter was free.³²⁹

At present conditions are reversed. In contemporary filmmaking classical cues tend not to be used for copyright and contractual reasons. Simply, to use them can be too expensive.³³⁰ Film music scholarship has often privileged aesthetic and formal issues, but in this instance we see that social and economic determinants are just as important in motivating use and non-use.

In connection, I have argued that the early consensus in Hollywood against using classical music can be seen as a piece of music community solidarity.³³¹ This is still true today; use of recordings means fewer jobs for composers and musicians. For this reason the most recent Musician's Union pact, as well as American Federation of Musicians agreements, throws up logistical disincentives to the use of classical music in films (having to pay every session musician royalties, etc.³³²). These are some of the reasons why there was once a great deal of classical music usage, and why this usage has now dropped off somewhat.

Such practical considerations can even put traditional concerns about source music in an interesting new light. Max Steiner defends original film music, on the assumption that familiar material draws undue attention to itself. "While the American

³²⁹. Berg, 1976, 80, 124-5.

³³⁰. Brown, 1988, 209, note 26; Last, personal communication, 1995.

³³¹. See chapter 1.

³³². Brown, 1994, 65.

people are more musically minded than any other nation in the world, they are still not entirely familiar with all the old and new masters' works and would thereby be prone to 'guessing' and distraction."³³³

This may at times be true, but although it can be the case that a familiar piece of music will overturn the traditional narrative hierarchies and call undue attention to itself (I have already suggested that this is not necessarily bad), the fact is that much of the repertory is not that familiar. Silent film organist Dennis James tells of his efforts to reconstruct the original score for Don Juan (1926). Pieces were missing from the manuscript, and had to be transcribed from the soundtrack. James, a musician with a fairly substantial knowledge of the repertory, later found out that the cues were directly from Massenet and Wagner, and that he was just not familiar with them.³³⁴ As with latter day reconstructions, so in the original instances the idiomatic appositeness of late Romantic music did not only provide a model for original composition, but it is very possible for the model music itself to blend in, seamlessly and, figuratively speaking, silently.

Gino Stefani suggests that "(i)n a minimal sense, competence at opus or work level is the trivial fact of recognizing a piece."³³⁵ In relation, film composer David Raksin speaks of the oxymoronic "esoteric howler", of a predominant kind of musical joke that requires the Grove musical dictionary to understand it.³³⁶ Just as this kind of joke may not quite reach the cheap seats (nor is it guaranteed comprehension by the initiates), so too with the use of apparently familiar music: much of it will remain unrecognized, and will thus be unable to distract.

³³³. Quoted in Flinn, 1992, 37. Keller (1946-7, *Sight and Sound*, volume 15, number 60, 26) discusses the distracting potential of familiarity, and the related difficulties of self-justifying snobbery in the listener who can identify the cue.

³³⁴. See James, 1989, 75.

³³⁵. Stefani, 1987, 15.

³³⁶. Raksin, 1943, 253.

In addition to the likelihood of unfamiliarity, utilitarian practice in the past reveal for us the possibilities of familiarity. Richard Bush points out how often music composed for one thing can be quite aptly used in another.³³⁷ His discussion of recycled music from serial pictures pertains to a strictly industrial setting, with strictly practical (reuse was cheap and fast) motivations. What applies in this instance also pertains to classical cues we recognize. And music's circumstantial transposability is that much more true in other settings where quotations are more rational, and responses more studied.

If practical motivations are an important factor in dealing with musical quotation, so too are impractical motivations. In other words, we are sometimes at a loss to understand exactly what a filmmaker or musician is doing. Silent film organist Gaylord Carter holds that "the key of D flat has a rich brown velour feeling, like lush drapes."³³⁸ This seems a valid enough observation, but it points the complicated fact that an artist's mind has its own reasons, and they are not always communicated clearly to the outside.³³⁹

What, then, of the mandates of communication outlined in the last chapter? Our misunderstandings, whether derived from a flaw of authorial execution, a gap in our own perceptions, or a difficulty in verbalizing either, point up again a basic reality of contrapuntal interactions. They tend to exceed, bypass, confound categorizations, intentions and expectations.

³³⁷. Bush (1989, 147) discusses the use of Heinz Roemheld's score to The Black Cat (1934) in the first series of Flash Gordon serials, the many resurrections of Franz Waxman's Bride of Frankenstein (1935) score in subsequent horrors, and the delight of horror aficionados in recognizing the echoes.

³³⁸. Personal communication, September, 1994.

³³⁹. Among many possibilities, Godard's Pierrot le Fou (1965), Two or Three Things I Know About Her (1966), and Tour/Detour (1978), Pasolini's Uccellacci e Uccellini (1966) and Oedipus Rex (1967), Bresson's L'Argent (1983) are a few examples of works where classical quotation seems careful and semi-rational, but where substantial opaqueness makes comprehension difficult for the viewer.

It is often true that obscure, elite, even arcane motivations keep quoted film music from communicating clearly, if in fact clear communication is even intended. I have mentioned how it is important to identify the work being quoted. But knowing what it is does not necessarily help us with what it is doing, or with what it means.

For example, Jean-Luc Godard uses the second movement of Beethoven's C major quartet (op. 59, no.3) throughout his film *Prenom, Carmen* (1983). It took me some time to identify the piece, which seemed necessary in order to ascertain symbolic intent and import. But finding, and then researching the piece itself didn't much help me. Beethoven certainly means a great many things, as does this particular composition. And of all filmmakers, Godard would be aware of these meanings. But I was unable to find which of these motivated him. Which is relevant to my own response? Was he quoting his own past music uses, from films I'd not seen, or not listened to with sufficient care? Did he just like the sound of it?³⁴⁰

These examples suggest one reason to move away from author-based interpretation. Ascribing artistic intent without full awareness of the artist's motivations can be a perilous undertaking. Did Luchino Visconti mean all the things that I observed earlier, or are these interpretations simply examples of my own critical excess? The latter is certainly possible, and excess is one of the causes for the kind of neo-formalist, against-interpretation strategies already cited.³⁴¹ I will argue that finding something unintended is not necessarily a problem; meaning can be reaped whether or not an author is aware of having planted the seed. Cues and their connotations are as important, but in these cases it is not the motive of the artist so much as the listener/critic's cultural

³⁴⁰. This quartet also appears, and more clearly, in Godard's *Two or Three Things I Know About Her* (1966). Similarly, I erected a huge interpretive elaboration around Pasolini's use of later Beethoven in *Oedipus Re* (1967), only to find that it was in fact a particularly dissonant quartet by Mozart, (K465). An alternative elaboration replaced my first one, but the interpretive ice upon which I stood was clearly thin.

³⁴¹. For some critical overreaching, see Christopher Palmer on *2001: A Space Odyssey* (1968), quoted in Larson, 1985, 351. Refutation of same is found in *ibid.*, 274, 311-12, 349-51.

awareness that flushes out connections and informs the interpretation. The point is that critical creativity is valid, but it should not justify itself by ascribing a subjective interpretation to the artist.³⁴²

There is another reason to move away from authors. An audience may not fully grasp an artist's intentions. These may be circumvented by purely practical pressures. Or, as with the overreaching critic, it may be that the artist's intentions/executions are not completely coherent or justified. Our Romantic predilections notwithstanding, the creator is not always in full control of his or her materials, or aware of the ways they reinforce or undercut the apparent, or the intended message.

In his discussion of sound montage Pudovkin said the following:

Always there exist two rhythms, the rhythmic course of the objective world and the tempo and rhythm with which man observes this world. The world is a whole rhythm, while man receives only partial impressions of this world through his eyes and ears and to a lesser extent through his very skin.³⁴³

This is obviously as true for the producer as it is for the receiver, for the filmmaker as much as the film viewer. Impressions are partial, conclusions drawn from them are incomplete, and our expressions inadequate.

Much use of classical music in film is simply unaccountable. In the 1943 British release San Demetrio, London a crippled tanker appears to be sinking, at which time there is heard a brief snatch of melody from the first movement of Rimsky-Korsakov's *Scheherezade*. Why? To suggest the romance of wartime transport? To link a modest

³⁴². Martin Nordern makes a helpful related distinction in discussing "clear-cut influences, likely influences and coincidental but still noteworthy similarities" in films' interactions with the other arts. See Nordern, 1988, "Film and painting," in Film and the arts in symbiosis, ed. Gary Edgerton, New York, Greenwood, 10, 17-45.

piece of Ealing propaganda with ancient and noble storytelling traditions? Or, as is more likely, for no reason at all?³⁴⁴

Music critics have often strenuously objected to this kind of loose and unmotivated quotation. Hans Keller, writing in *Music Review* about George Auric's score for The Titfield Thunderbolt (1953), derides "a twice used D maj. parody of *Eine Kleine Nachtmusik*...(it) is formally bad, dramatically obscure, and not funny enough to be musically justified."³⁴⁵ Keller objects here to a brief quote, but apparent miscues can also be much bigger, and more interesting.

What does one make of a juxtaposition like the one in John Woo's The Killer (1989)? The eponymous assassin and his admiring policeman foil are united in the final shootout, which takes place in a church, where the men are defending themselves and the blinded heroine from a horde of villains.³ At a climactic moment said bad guys' perfidy reaches a breaking point, which point is demonstrated when they machine gun a statue of the Virgin Mary. It shatters in slow motion, and at that moment the soundtrack strikes up the strains of the *Sinfonia* from Handel's *Messiah*. Woo's montage fireworks and operatic melodrama literally explode from this point, and although the combination of music with image and story could be seen as having sacreligious implications (consider the figure summoned by this particular music, the nature of this sacrifice, and the merit of the cinematic saviour), to take it as such seems a touch oversensitive.

Having bypassed offense, confusion still remains. What motivates this quotation? Does it refer to the killer's sacrifice? The virginal ideal represented by the blinded singer? Is it all pure sensation, with intertextual correspondences being purely unwitting? Given such proliferations it is easy to take note of Woo's breathlessly

³⁴³. Pudovkin, 1948, 158.

³⁴⁴. Or perhaps not: one of the episodes in the symphonic poem's last movement is entitled "The Ship Goes to Pieces on a Rock Surmounted by a Bronze Warrior (Shipwreck)."

³⁴⁵. Keller, 1952, *Music Review*, XIII, 222-4.

exhilarating/absurd enactment, enumerate the elements contributing to it, shrug one's shoulders and move on.³⁴⁶

Shrugging aside, this is the course recommended by the formalist schools mentioned in the first chapter. Where we don't know, or don't acknowledge the importance of intent, where the results are aboundingly complex, it is a good course. This is especially true when we think of the many unconsidered and underconsidered uses of this music throughout film history.

Still critical elaborations can be appropriate when we see clearly how clumsy cues have exceeded the filmmaker's intent and expectation, leaving us with unwitting but still substantial insights. Chapayev (1934), by Georgi and Sergei Vasiliev, was one of the most celebrated successes of Soviet Social Realism. Its aims were to celebrate the revolution, and to condemn the reactionary forms and factions that oppose it. In one scene a hulking peasant soldier, assistant to the sinister White Russian General, appears to be dancing in stolid fashion to the first movement of Beethoven's *Moonlight Sonata* (# 14). His commander--dressed and groomed, incidentally, like Erich von Stroheim's sinister Prussian--is playing the piece, and intercutting reveals that the soldier is actually polishing the floor, with his bare foot in some kind of brush contraption. The music provides a bizarre accompaniment to the lowly task, which the soldier is forced to perform in humiliating fashion. As the sequence continues intercutting combines with the use of heavy and heavy-handed strings which fatten the piano score, increasing tension and suggesting a worm about to turn.

The intent of this curious montage is doubtless to associate the bourgeois militarist with the reactionary values of individualistic romanticism, as symbolized by Beethoven, and/or the kind of man who would be playing his music. What looks like

³⁴⁶. Such confusions point to phenomenological possibilities; see brief discussion on bracketing to follow. With regard to semi-coherent/over-abundant intertextual collisions, consider also the work-specific implications of Wagner in Chaplin's The Great Dictator (1940).

cultured enjoyment is revealed to closer attention as exploitation, and culture being a poor consolation for the starving, the dance is suddenly not so enjoyable.

This view of classical music is enhanced when contrasted with another use in Cecil B. de Mille's The Buccaneer (1938). Soon after being introduced to the story's rough and attractive pirate/hero Jean Lafitte (Frederic March) we hear a lovely air played on a violin. "Beautiful", says our hero. "What is it?", "Handel's Largo", replies an anomalously musical pirate who stands alongside. The point of this rather protruding incident is to suggest, by classical music, that Lafitte is subject to improvement and culture. (Later, to reinforce the music's civilizing effects and how they are threatened by the brutes of the world, the violinist is killed and in a brief pointed shot some savage steps on his violin.) This incident occurs immediately before Lafitte catches some rogue mutineers and initiates said self-improvement. And what shape does it take? Patriotic pro-American action, of course. It is precisely this kind of connection that informs contradictory pictures like that of the Vasilievs'.

De Mille's entertaining film is another entry in the group of movies where a rough-hewn character, an apparent cad, is really just an as yet unfinished heroic individualist, who needs only the influence of a good woman and the call of country to end his rakish adolescence and assume his proper nobility. For other examples, see for instance The Sea Hawk (1940), The Black Swan (1942)--and Chapayev. The actual effect of the latter's Beethoven sequence is not so straightforward as it might first sound/appear. The montage equation leaves considerable remainders. The use of strings brings Beethoven, for instance, into the realm of high Hollywood melodramatic manipulation, while the piece itself, and the associations connected to its composer, most suggest the individualistic romanticism of Chapayev himself. In the end it is the film, and not the reactionary commander, that buys partially into the bourgeois values and techniques that it seeks to oppose. Apart from the national allegiances Chapayev and

The Buccaneer are much the same, and ideological distinctions, when considered with their cinematic renderings, are largely cosmetic.

One important reality, then, is to acknowledge when and how the artist falls short. I am not simply advocating conventional evaluative criticism. As I hope the brief discussion of Chapayev demonstrates, shortfall is natural, and interesting. Lewis Carroll had this to say when asked about hidden meaning in the "Alice" books. "I have but one answer. I don't know! Still, you know, words mean more than we mean to express when we use them, so a whole book ought to mean a great deal more than the writer meant."³⁴⁷

In the same way that parallel/counterpoint geometries have caused some to underestimate the complex workings of music and meaning in film, an over-emphasis on the artist can distract us from other fundamental parts of the equation. Proper perspectives about artist intent and artist autonomy lead us to the other part of artistic exchange, to reception and phenomenology. And a proper understanding about the giver and the receiver gives us a clearer view of the "message" in their midst, without which music and meaning in film cannot be comprehended.

Interpretive Strategies: Phenomenology

I will now address audience, the other interpretive element, the other programme-providing entity that enables us to understand uses of classical music in film. In art music attention is generally paid to the production and not the reception of music. This fact coincides with prejudices about film music, and about film. This prejudice holds that expressiveness originates at the creative source, which does not allow for the possibility of creative reception. "Considered as an art, music has two distinct branches, the art of

³⁴⁷. Quoted in Lewis, Peter, 1994, "Inspiring the Alice Band", London Times, 6 November, *The Culture*, 5.

the composer and the art of the executant."³⁴⁸ And the listener? With regard to film, the viewer?

When Dudley Andrew wrote in 1978 of the "neglected tradition of phenomenology in film studies," he was speaking in a climate of what might be termed structuralist fatigue. Film theory had elaborately traced the ways in which semiotic and psychoanalytic and ideological determinations construct us as individuals and as viewing subjects. But for Andrew these theoretical models had not been adequate to the *experience* of textual and aesthetic elements of film. The work of signification, the cinematic apparatus and classification could never account for the "quality of experience," and the "surplus of meaning" that experience with films gives us.³⁴⁹

Andrew's opposition of phenomenology to prevailing strands of structuralism and the post-structural synthesis is just one instance of a long line of dialectical negotiations in the history of this philosophical movement. Founded by Edmund Husserl at the beginning of the twentieth century, phenomenology countered positivist and materialist thought by attending to the mechanisms of perception. Phenomenologists say that meaning is not strictly held in a material object or ideal essence of form, but in the individual experience. Although there are essential elements to objects that exist, objectively and in fact, our experience is to perceive in part and from a certain perspective. In the end we must concentrate not on what something absolutely means or unequivocally is, but what it is in individual perception and responsiveness.

Husserl distinguished between the physical reality of things of which we are conscious, and the actual act or experience of that consciousness. Inner experience and awareness are primary. Phenomenology deals with mental objects, suspending the judgment of ultimate, essential things, for the things that one sees, and the way one sees

³⁴⁸. 1961, Oxford English Dictionary, vol. VI, see 782-4, London. Claudia Gorbman (plenary session, *Screen* conference, Glasgow, July 6, 1995) also discusses the resistance to and the validity of this notion of creative reception.

³⁴⁹. Andrew, 1978, 630-31.

them. Importantly, this emphasis allows (through the concept of bracketing) even for “inappropriate” or “incorrect” perceptions.

An illustration: it may be that source music use in John Woo’s The Killer is not a shoulder-shrugging mystery, but rather a parable for Hong Kong 1997, with Handel roughly representing a British Asia menaced by an uncertain future. But phenomenology, without denying that this may be a true and authoritative interpretation, brackets such objective possibilities and considers the object or phenomenon as presented to and perceived by the individual. In other words, on first seeing and working through that particular sequence of Woo’s film, this was all I was able to come up with.³⁵⁰

This is not to say that a phenomenological reading can justify indulgence or sloppiness. But it does mean that these readings are perceptual, perspectival, and do not claim completeness. As we consider individual acts of perception, we are aware that they are transitory and contingent, and that they are also valid and important.

When Dudley Andrew reintroduced these terms to film debates³⁵¹, the body of theory was perhaps not particularly amenable to them. This was Andrew’s point; discussions of ideology (after Benjamin and Althusser) and of subject formation through and by language (through Lacan and Baudry), though dominant in authority and influence, had brought the field to a joyless impasse. There was for Andrew too much systematizing, too much ideological and/or psychological determinism. These things of course deserved attention, but Andrew held that this attention came at the expense of the human, the precious and poignant considerations which are finally the reason and justification for scholarly pursuit. “If life and reality lie beyond human experience or

³⁵⁰. On bracketing see Husserl, 1962, 96-101.

³⁵¹. After the temporary eclipse of phenomenological film theorists like André Bazin and V.F. Perkins.

our consciousness of it, as certain recent structuralists have avowed, then let's forget it anyway."³⁵²

Since Andrew's writing, however, there have been numerous developments along the more human lines that he advocated. The rise of spectator studies investigated, by quantitative means and otherwise, the place of the individual receiver in the whole equation. Since individuals also reside within larger social groups, as well as parts of subcommunities within those larger groups, spectator studies also considered how a plurality of meaning in texts could speak polyglossically to those various constituencies.³⁵³ Reception theory emphasized the spectator as the active site of meaning, and not just a passive or neutral husk.³⁵⁴ In support, theorists like Mikhail Bakhtin were appropriated to demonstrate the multiplicity of the processes of communication and meaning construction. For Bakhtin, the heteroglossic (or many-voiced) text invites a reader to participate dialogically, which exchange accounts much more accurately and joyfully for the process than previous hailings and inoculations had done.

Phenomenology too was absorbed into the discussion, and proved particularly suited to addressing its questions. Vivian Sobchack's 1992 book, The Address of the Eye, discusses both the interior and the exterior of the film experience, suggesting again that to psychoanalysis and ideology and the other staples of post-structuralism must be added consciousness, and an awareness of its transformative possibilities.³⁵⁵ Such meetings and transformations are, of course, the project of phenomenology.

³⁵². Andrew, 1978, 632.

³⁵³. For a clear retrospective summary of this shift see Leo Braudy and Marshall Cohen's introduction to the fourth (1992) edition of their anthology (revised from early editions co-edited by Gerald Mast) Film Theory and Criticism (New York, Oxford University Press, x).

³⁵⁴. See Christian Metz's blending of Lacanian psychoanalysis and semiotics with the idea of a more active viewing subject in his The Imaginary Signifier: Psychoanalysis and the Cinema. (1982, trans. Celia Britton et al., Bloomington, Indiana University Press.)

³⁵⁵. Sobchack, 1992, xiii-xix.

How do we create a reliable grounding amidst these acknowledged multiplicities? Sobchack develops the titular idea of the address of the eye, which occurs at the nexus of inside and outside, which partakes of social construction, but which also contains an element of individual choice. Film cannot be separated from our experience of film.

Phenomenological description and interpretation have revealed the cinematic subject (both film and spectator) as at once introverted and extroverted, as existing in the world as both subject and object. Thus...the film and the spectator are never experienced as completely self-possessed.³⁵⁶

For Sobchack there exists between the cinematic text and its receiver a kind of mechano-biological complex, a multiple site of mutual creation.

The camera its perceptive organ, the projector its expressive organ, the screen its discrete and material occupation of worldly space, the cinema exists as a visible performance of the perceptive and expressive structure of lived-body experience. Viewing, re-viewing, revising vision as easily and transparently as one mechanically operates and the other biologically breathes, each film and each spectator separately live the advent of vision.³⁵⁷

All of this means, in relation to the present study, that the workings of classical music in film, for all the proscriptions of composers and critics, for all the avowed intentions of those utilizing it, must finally be calculated and articulated in the way that a

³⁵⁶ . Ibid., 298.

³⁵⁷ . Ibid., 299.

viewer sees and a listener hears. In connection, Dudley Andrew once again offers a helpful formulation.

His 1983 book, Concepts of Film Theory, Andrew surveys some of the theoretical approaches with which his first phenomenology article had taken at least implicit issue. Without rejecting these constructs out of hand, he also concludes that none, nor even all of them together, are ultimately sufficient.

The inclination to invoke philosophy, psychoanalysis, linguistics, logic or ideological theory in undertaking film study suggests not so much that film is ruled by other disciplines as the fact that films are the site of myriad problematics, involving multiple aspects of culture.³⁵⁸

As for the problem of fusing all of these multiple and interdependent demands, Andrew comes at the end to hermeneutics, to cycles of interpretation and the final human factor as we account for our film experience. Texts call to us in ways that are, in the end, fundamentally human. And our responses, however analytical or informed by ostensibly objective theoretical models, are likewise “cries” of human aspiration.

What we do with (film expressions and models of cinematic interpretation) is as varied as the variety of interpreters and theories of interpretation. Yet doing anything with them whatsoever shows the interdependence of mind and body, of thought and voice, of meaning and expression. Certainly this is not an untroubled interdependence, but it is one that gives to viewing, reading, and writing a place in human life different from philosophy, analysis, or sheer behavior. This border zone

³⁵⁸ . Andrew, 1983, 189.

of reading is the life of the imagination. It is worth as much as we
imagine it to be.³⁵⁹

Andrew's border zone, and film phenomenology generally, is built on the emphasis on text and on viewer, and on the notion that it is at the borders between the two where meaning resides, and it is in the meeting between the two that it multiplies. It is also built on the affirmation that this subjective and variable site is valid, and valuable.

I will now discuss the historical grounding, as well as the theoretical implications of phenomenology as it applies to classical music. To do so I will briefly return to the aims of Soviet montage cinema, especially as it related to its intended audience. I will show how, although the audience was ostensibly the whole key and point to montage aesthetics, its real nature and real rights were largely misunderstood, or even ignored. My chapter three suggested how the misunderstandings continue. By revisiting a movement away from strict montage geometries we will see, in an interpretive sense, how the audience can take its place in the cluster of montage, contrapuntal and programmatic equations existing within film source music.

We know that Soviet film discourse is responsible for many "counterpoint" confusions. Significantly, artist/audience confusions are also contained in that same discourse. The polemical period of the first Soviet Republic was characterized by vigorous debates over artistic issues, with the film front being perhaps the most furiously disputed. Along with the familiar formalist manifestos about increasing the expressiveness and fulfilling the high destiny of film art, 1920s debates also considered formalism in terms of social responsibility, the propagandizing of the proletariat, and the very serious problem of the popular inaccessibility of montage products.

Although we properly celebrate and concentrate on the standard milestones of early Soviet cinema, they don't give us all of the pertinent details. As had been the case

³⁵⁹ . Ibid., 190.

during the silent period, in the early Soviet sound period the imports and potboilers, the more conventional narrative films, were simply more popular with the cinema audiences. Though its relevance remains, in terms of mainstream effect, the influence of the avant garde has been considerably overestimated.³⁶⁰

There were important sound experiments (Enthusiasm [1930], Deserter) but, as with the earlier period of apparent plenitude, there was a feeling, and likely a valid one, that the filmmakers were using the situation as testing ground for their own erudite and inaccessible theorizing, instead of for addressing the needs of the mostly illiterate people. The Party's push at this time for "mass intelligibility" aimed, quite legitimately given its avowed priority to indoctrinate the citizenry, to shift from an avant garde more appreciated abroad to things the people and the state needed, and could understand at home. In addition to pure villainy,³⁶¹ many Soviet film officials were independently inspired to consider how to more effectively reach the people, and thereby to demonstrate the social consciousness that was, avowedly, a universal subscription.

The incomprehensibility of much montage cinema contradicts the intentions of its original development, which were, if we are to very carefully take Eisenstein's formulation of intellectual montage as being at least partly typical,³⁶² to communicate through juxtaposition certain ideas to the audience. And although the fact may be effaced by auteurist celebrations of the Soviet avant garde, the audience was always theorized as the key to, the reason for montage.

Here is an excerpt from Eisenstein's earliest statement on the subject, "The Montage of Attractions," written in 1923.

³⁶⁰. See Taylor/Christie, 1988, 3-10.

³⁶¹. Shumyatsky's "The Film Bezhin Meadow" at least would seem to validate his reputation as a sinister bureaucrat. Op. cit. 378-81. See also Eisenstein, 1968, 28 for a chilling account of things to come.

³⁶². It is perilous to cite any single statement of Eisenstein's, as his investigations were so broad and his theory so constantly developing that each citation is sure to be quite contradicted by another. Still, there were constants, and each period can be characterized by certain preoccupations that remain valid within that period. With that in mind, one

Theatre's basic material derives from the audience: the moulding of the audience in a desired direction (or mood) is the task of every utilitarian theatre...*An attraction (in our diagnosis of theatre) is any aggressive moment in theatre, i.e. any element of it that subjects the audience to emotional or psychological influence, verified by experience and mathematically calculated to produce specific emotional shocks in the spectator in their proper order within the whole. These shocks provide the only opportunity of perceiving the ideological aspect of what is being shown, the final ideological conclusion.*³⁶³

"Attraction" presupposes audience involvement. Individual shots, as attractions, are a stimulation by which the spectator senses similarity or contrast, which are then joined as appropriate.

But it is in this notion of the appropriate that montage aesthetics become vulnerable. Accessibility was the first prerogative, but the avant garde seems by very nature prone to opaqueness, and beyond a (not insignificant) failure in practice, difficulty does not necessarily invalidate the work of this, or any other period. The problem lies rather in the tone, and in the conception of the viewer that tone implies. "The spectator is *made* to traverse the road of creation the author traversed in creating the image."³⁶⁴ All through these early statements we find that which has made post-modernity so suspicious of totalities from Knox to Marx. Everywhere is coercion and inevitability, the idea of audiences forced down certain paths to the only correct conclusions.

Pudovkin speaks similarly:

proceeds, though cautiously.

³⁶³. From Taylor/Christie translation, 1988, 87. Emphasis in original. Eisenstein refers to the theatre, but the issues remain relevant to film, which would soon become his focus.

³⁶⁴. Eisenstein, 1942, 32. Emphasis added.

One must always remember that the film, by the very nature of its construction (the rapid alternation of successive pieces of celluloid), requires of the spectator an exceptional concentration of attention. The director, and consequently the scenarist also, *leads despotically* along with him the attention of the spectator. The latter sees only that which the director shows him; for reflection, for doubt, for criticism, there is neither room nor time, and consequently the smallest error in clearness or vividness of construction will be apprehended as an unpleasant confusion or as a simple, ineffective blank.³⁶⁵

Beyond the discomfort of this despotism, of "*forcing* the spectator to compare the two actions all the time"³⁶⁶, there is here a problematic picture of a passive and helpless audience. This may (or may not) have been true of Russia's rural cine-illiterates, but when Pudovkin speaks of Pavlovian attempts³⁶⁷ to create certain emotional states through, it would seem, intrinsically expressive camera techniques, through things that invariably mean certain other things, then this totality trembles. The underconsidered agent in the montage equation was the individual receiver.

Emphasizing reception may jeopardize the author's authority. It also destabilizes an author's message. But there are salutary effects to this destabilization. Too often the struggle for comprehension leads automatically to the assumption that comprehension can be, or must be obtained. Godard counters, saying of his Two or Three Things I Know About Her that "basically what I am doing is making the spectator share the

³⁶⁵. Pudovkin, 1948, 6. Emphasis added. Of course it was this very reflection, doubt and criticism, and the "errors" they generated, that brought Stalin into the montage mix. Directors were eventually forced in the same ways they thought to force their audiences.

³⁶⁶. Ibid., 48. Emphasis added.

³⁶⁷. Cf. The Mechanics of the Brain (1925), Pudovkin's first film which dealt with the "progress in knowledge of conditioned reflexes attained by workers in Professor

arbitrary nature of my choices, and the quest for general rules which *might* justify a particular choice."³⁶⁸

Alternatively, those rules might *not* justify the choice. Jean Vigo wrote of Buñuel/Dali's *Un Chien Andalou* (1928).

I have met M. Luis Buñuel only once and then only for 10 minutes, and our meeting in no way touched upon *Un Chien Andalou*. This enables me to discuss it with that much greater liberty. Obviously my comments are entirely personal. Possibly I will get near, without doubt I will commit some howlers.³⁶⁹

Howlers are possible, if that means differing from an author's intent. But if the reader is an author as well, especially with a work as provocatively open-ended as Buñuel's (or Godard's) film, then "mistake" comes to mean something altogether different, if it means anything at all.

Gino Stefani reminds us that

(m)usicians and musicologists have a tendency to neglect or even to deny the semantic thickness of techniques; thus they consider music essentially as the production of objects and events. But for our society as a whole, for its general competence in music, music is always the production of signs. It is therefore particularly important here to consider *ordinary people*, what they think and feel about musical 'language', and what they do with it.³⁷⁰

Pavlov's laboratory." Ibid. 126-7.

³⁶⁸. Godard, 1972, 239. Emphasis added.

³⁶⁹. Buñuel, 1971, 75.

³⁷⁰. Stefani, 1987, 12-13. Emphasis added.

Jean Jacques Nattiez begins his discussion of musical sound and noise by subdividing it, distinguishing between "poietic" (composer choice), "neutral" (physical realities, sound waves, etc.) and "esthetic" (perceptive judgment) categories.³⁷¹ In Nattiez' model experiences with and analyses of music shift according to the level, though of course all the levels operate and interrelate simultaneously. Against general assumptions in the musical community, there is no hierarchy implied here.

This is an essential point, as the experience of the hearer is especially important in the experience and understanding of classical music in film. To an important degree, what the audience viewer thinks and feels when music meets image, is the correct interpretation.

Just as Marx's prescriptions and predictions were not equal to his difficult-to-deny descriptions of the class struggle, so too does the montage aesthetic fall short, at least in its earliest accounting of the effects and affects it was likely to have. In art and experience, collision is everywhere, but what may result proves difficult to foresee. The inadequacy of social and cinematic dialectics lies in the fact that struggles, collisions, reactions simply do not end precisely or predictably. This is especially true when the collisions and chemical reactions take place inside of the spectator's head.

Eisenstein:

For us, to know is to participate.

For this we value the biblical term--'and Abraham *knew* his wife Sarah'--by no means meaning that he became acquainted with her.

Perceiving is building. The perceiving of life--indissolubly--is the construction of life--the *rebuilding* of it.³⁷²

³⁷¹. Nattiez, 1990, 47.

³⁷². Eisenstein, 1968, 41. Emphasis in original.

The genetic metaphor is an apt one. Wim Wenders asks: "At what moment is a film born? Or perhaps it would be better to say conceived?"³⁷³ The phenomenological element is an essential part of the montage equation; as with any coupling, the realities of genetics, of dominant and recessive genes (not to mention environmental determinations) make the outcome of the meeting impossible to predict.

Films have no existence other than through our eyes. In fact, they are always seen twice: first by a director with the help of his writer, cameraman, actors and a few other people, and second by everyone in 'the audience'. Everybody sees and creates his/her own film, the reviewer, too. Like anyone else he is guided by the film on the screen adding (or subtracting) his own emotions, memories, opinions, sense of humour, openness, colours and so on.³⁷⁴

The original notion of the cinema of attraction was not neutral. It had a decided hierarchy, with the artist at the top. Though it presupposed audience involvement, its ultimate flaw was that it did not sufficiently account for the viewer.³⁷⁵

But it is not sufficient simply to affirm audience rights while offhandedly acknowledging that that audience is pretty diverse. What is the nature of that diversity?

Dziga Vertov wrote in 1923: "(A) ballet audience haphazardly follows first the ensemble of the groups of dancers, then random individuals, then somebody's feet: a

³⁷³. Wenders, 1991, 86-7.

³⁷⁴. Wenders, 1989, viii.

³⁷⁵. Pudovkin, and early Eisenstein, may also have been hindered by a reductive notion of single meanings and one-to-one correspondence between sign and signification. Music, and especially source music's fecundity in producing meaning is an effective counter to such underdeterminations.

series of incoherent impressions that are different for every member of the audience."³⁷⁶ The complexity is daunting, and with a form featuring concrete visual moorings. Music is even more difficult.

E.M. Forster characterizes the personality of an audience as follows:

There is no such person as the average concert-goer, and no one can speak in his name. Not only does our enjoyment of music differ, but our attention wanders from it in different directions, and returns to it at different angles; so that if the soul of an audience could be photographed it would resemble a flight of scattering dipping birds, who belong neither to the air nor the water nor the earth. In theory the audience is a solid slab, provided with a single pair of enormous ears, which listen, and with a pair of hands, which clap. Actually it is that elusive scattering flight of winged creatures, darting around, and spending much of its time where it shouldn't, thinking now 'how lovely!', now 'my foot's gone to sleep', and passing in the beat of a bar from there's Beethoven back in C minor again!' to 'did I turn the gas off?' or 'I do think he might have shaved'.³⁷⁷

Each response is different, as is each receptive programme: the extracinematic frames of reference and experience that the viewer brings to the equation. We have seen the place of connotation and association in the complex ways that music means. Leonard Meyer suggests that susceptibility to musical connotation depends on the individual.

³⁷⁶. Taylor/Christie, 1988, 93. The multivalence of Vertovian cinema (as experienced; Vertov's polemical writings could be as prescriptive as those of his contemporaries), like the musical concepts in the present discussion, counter most manipulative mandates in film. The countering applies not only to Pudovkin/Eisenstein, but also to the guiding of audiences central to and inherent in the industrial mode of representation.

³⁷⁷. Forster, E.M., 1944, "From the audience," in National gallery concerts, 10th October.

Whether a piece of music arouses connotations depends to a great extent upon the disposition and training of the individual listener and upon the presence of cues, either musical or extramusical, which tend to activate connotative responses.³⁷⁸

The diffuseness of response here characterized points again the difficulty of establishing any kind of rational semiotic system in relation to musical meaning. Frames of reference do not sufficiently coincide. This state of affairs need not be troubling, however, as possibilities of enrichment outstrip the challenges. For this we allow the idea of programme to proliferate. Stefani observes that "(s)peaking and understanding a language is different from studying its written grammar and theory."³⁷⁹ This is true, especially in music/film music, where language, let alone theory and grammar, is so tenuous. But it still communicates.

John Cage:

I said that since the sounds were sounds this gave people hearing them the chance to be people, centred within themselves where they actually are, not artificially in the distance as they are accustomed to be trying to figure out what is being said by some artist by means of sound.³⁸⁰

1939-10th October, 1944, London, printed for the trustees.

³⁷⁸. Meyer, 1956, 264.

³⁷⁹. Stefani, 1987, 13. Film music may not reflect any rational semiotic system, but it can still communicate generally, through codes that attentive film listeners come to recognize, and which inattentive listeners may still sense. So it is that accordions can take us to France, electronic music, in *Forbidden Planet* and elsewhere, effectively denote outer space, while discord, from *Wozzeck* on, suggests madness. Note, however, that the very constraining conventionality of these codes (see Plett on "stagnation", in *Intertextuality: Research in Text Theory*, 1991, Berlin, Walter de Gruyter and Co., 16) suggests the value of the more open, even confounding model being discussed here.

³⁸⁰. In Cage and Tudor, 1959, side 1.

Roland Barthes talks of the writerly approach to reading, where "the goal of the literary work (of literature as work) is to make the reader no longer a consumer, but a producer of the text."³⁸¹ The point here is that there is an artist and there is a receiver, or vice versa. Cage tells of a conductor for one of his compositions that doesn't have a score, but only his own part. "Though he affects the other performers, he does not control them."³⁸²

I have presented programmes as elements of montage equations, the points of reference upon which collisions and counterpoints meet and turn. Eisenstein fully acknowledged and understood that things were not as simple as his original formulations had suggested. In chapter three we discussed the importance of overtone montage, a method which bears revisiting in this context. In "Film Form: New Problems" Eisenstein takes from Piaget the idea of inner speech, a pre-conscious, pre-verbal jumble of stimuli which clash and overlap. Speech, and other things besides (film theory, for instance) organizes this jumble. But in addition to this organizing, other viabilities began to emerge. As mentioned, Joyce's *Ulysses* became for Eisenstein a major inspiration, where another form of inner speech, one which remains unrationalized, emerges as exemplary. It is individual, subjective, undomesticated. It is just this kind of inner speech which becomes, in the present instance and in relation to the processing of musico-cinematic information, a model of reception and apprehension.³⁸³

³⁸¹. Barthes, 1974, 4.

³⁸². In Cage and Tudor, op. cit.

³⁸³. I will not take the time here to thoroughly explore synaesthesia (Joyce representing a synaesthetic ideal for Eisenstein), but I should note that there are negative elements to things I am putting in a positive light. Douglas Kahn points out that the sonic elements of synaesthesia have been habitually reduced to elements of human agency (speech and music), and that this reduction of sound possibilities is symptomatic of a general constraint on the kind of phenomenological and writerly freedom that I am here presenting, in a somewhat idealized form. Indeed, my emphasis on music could well be seen as being exemplary of this sonic subjugation. (See Kahn's "Introduction: Histories of Sound Once Removed" in Douglas Kahn and Gregory Whitehead, eds., Wireless imagination: sound, radio and the avant garde, Cambridge, MIT Press, 1-29 [especially 14-17].) However, I still take the concentration on musical issues to be completely valid.

Eisenstein used musical metaphors, discussing montage overtones which are only sensed subconsciously, but are still there. Dominants conventionally command most of our attention, but here opens the possibility of the other tones being considered with equal care and given equal importance. Eisenstein's famous admiration for Kabuki theatre was largely a response to that form's neutralization of the narrative, the bringing of all elements onto an equal level. In "The Filmic Fourth Dimension" Eisenstein calls for just such neutralization, for an acknowledgment of the "secondary vibrations" beyond the "central stimulus."³⁸⁴

Neutralization is one place where the *cinematic* counterpoint that we have discussed does work. Overtones, though not necessarily what and how Eisenstein foresaw, ring off the apparent struck note; and it's in phenomenology that they do so.

Eisenstein came to advocate consideration and validation of the totality, and in doing so found himself moving from the conceptual oppositions of original cinematic counterpoint to true polyphony, luxuriating thereby in the resulting overdeterminations and overabundances of meaning.

The implications? Conceivably, chaos. Dudley Andrew says that the great flaw of Eisenstein's theory is the mountain of arcane data that constantly clutters and obscures it.³⁸⁵ But this clutter contains a powerful truth, and the ultimate consistency of all of Eisenstein's multifarious investigations: everything is integrally connected, everything fits, even the remainders left at the end of the equations. In fact, without remainders, the equation has not been honestly worked out.³⁸⁶

Given all this, Eisenstein's first thoughts about intellectual montage are not so much invalidated as multiplied. Theses and antitheses create syntheses, but they are richer (and more difficult to contain) than he at first suspected. This remains true, even given, especially given the failure of the dialectical experiment with the historical Soviet

³⁸⁴. Eisenstein, 1949, 66.

³⁸⁵. Andrew, 1976, 42-3.

audience. Its misperceptions and unresolved contradictions simply point up the need for a more complex phenomenological and overtone model. As with the trajectory of Eisenstein's montage aesthetics (perception, emotion, cognition³⁸⁷), so now a neutralization based on broader definition of cinema, one properly providing for the receiver. To use Nattiez' terms we must move through every signifying space, from poietic through neutral to esthetic.

Indeterminacy

In this chapter we have moved from the artist's plan to the audience's experience, considering how each is important to the understanding of classical music in film. To conclude I wish to briefly discuss how a certain indeterminacy, or perhaps an unpredictable multiplicity aids that understanding.

I have argued that it is between strict parallelism and traditional figurative counterpoint that musical meaning is actually found, and that collisions are predicated on programmes. Similarly I would like to suggest that the tentative space between the artist's intention and the receiver's apprehension is where this meaning can be contextualized. Though certainties may be professed on either side, classical music as appropriated and heard is, to a great degree, indeterminate.

In his compositions and other presentations John Cage relinquished authorial control, at least in its conventional sense.³⁸⁸ There were also receptive (listener) implications stemming from this relinquishment. The combined result was indeterminacy, which is to say, with all the points of address and apprehension, reference and subjectivity, anything can happen.

³⁸⁶. Cf. Andrew, 1978, 1984.

³⁸⁷. Andrew, 1976, 42-75.

³⁸⁸. See Cage, 1961, 35-40. Of course from a certain perspective relinquishment was not complete. Though random operations were part of Cage's performances, his careful control of the score/script insured some substantial determination.

There are critical applications for this broad generalization. There are specifically musical sites for the sender/receiver/context topography that Janet Staiger describes, and that I cited at the beginning of this chapter. In his The American Film Musical, Rick Altman suggests a useful model to account for the construction and communication of meaning, in film and elsewhere.

Meaning, as I will define it, is never something that words or texts have but always something that is made in a four-party meaning-situation. An *author* (understood in the widest possible sense: individual, group, industry, etc.) circulates a *text* (which may vary from a single word, image, or gestures to multiple volumes) to an *audience* (singular or plural, present or removed) whose perception is partly dependent on the *interpretive community* to which its members belong...The model I am proposing has no message, that is no specific meaning that may be permanently ascribed to a given text. Instead, a text turns into a message (or different messages) only in the context of a specific audience in a specific interpretive community...The interpretive community may thus be defined in part as a *context* in which the text is to be interpreted; the interpretive community names the *intertexts* that will control the interpretation of a given text.³⁸⁹

As for the sender/receiver axis, Altman refers to two levels of language: one allows somewhat for authorial intent, but it still pre-exists and exceeds anything an author can consciously intend; the second, emerging out of vast history and histories,

³⁸⁹. Altman, 1987, 2, 4.

proliferates at the level of reception, and beyond anything the receiver can comprehend.³⁹⁰

In the field of musical semiotics, Gino Stefani proposes what he calls a "Model of Musical Competence." This model proposes five codes by which music is experienced, and by which musical experience is comprehended. General codes (pertaining to all experience), social practice (institutions and interactions within particular societies), musical techniques (theories and techniques specific to musical practice), style (connected with periods, genres, composers) and opus (the individual work or performance) all interact in complex ways. The complexities increase with the model providing for general and specialized musical competencies, for popular and highbrow practice and reception. The issues informing musical experience change drastically according to the experiences and motivations of those participating in that experience.³⁹¹

The result of all these interactions cannot be predicted exactly, but in that potentially frustrating fact lies the validity of it all. When film music is used and heard and processed, multiplications result.

In conclusion, and contrary to conventional parallel doctrines, film music resonates, and in its resonance its "appropriateness" is multiplied. Ralph Vaughan Williams:

(Y)ou must not be horrified, if you find that a passage which you intended to portray the villain's mad revenge has been used by the musical

³⁹⁰. Ibid., 3. This state insures not only an opening for more open apprehension, but also the continuation of the kind of misperceptions and contradictions already discussed in connection with Soviet montage experiments, and their affects—or not—on audiences.

³⁹¹. Stefani, 1987, esp. 9-10.

director to illustrate the cats being driven out of the dairy. The truth is, that within limits, any music can be made to fit any situation.³⁹²

Around the same time as Vaughan Williams' statement, Deems Taylor wrote the following of Walt Disney's Fantasia (on which Taylor collaborated).

The interpretations of the music in Fantasia are not the ordinarily accepted ones. The divergence from tradition is deliberate. Music is the most fluid of all the arts; and like any fluid, music, even program music, assumes the shape of its container. Granted that the container (or) program is not too grossly inappropriate, a given piece of music may fit two or three other stories just as well as those originally assigned to it.³⁹³

This notion of fluids and containers is a striking one. Though the publication is in part promotional, and Taylor would be expected to defend his own departures, the film largely confirms the accuracy of his sentiments.

John Cage tells a story of eating lunch in a restaurant. He sees through the window a pond with swimmers. "Inside the restaurant was a jukebox. Somebody put a dime in. I noticed that the music that came out accompanied the swimmers, though they

³⁹². Quoted in Huntley, 1947, 179. Michel Chion recommends an exercise called "forced marriage", where a film sequence is submitted to several diverse musical settings. He reports that when this is done there is an abundance of different correspondences, all according to the listener's point of view, or point of audition. Chion, 1994, 188-9.

³⁹³. Taylor, 1940, 16. See Brown, 1988, 166-7 on the transmutability of music in terms of meaning and feeling. Also *ibid.*, 203 on Jean Cocteau's cue shifting "accidental synchronism," and 209, note 23, on the same in the work of Bernard Herrmann. The opposite effect can also take place, where the film becomes the fluid and the music contains it. In Vivre sa Vie (1962) Godard used only the first measures of only two of the eleven variations on a theme composed by Michel Legrand. Uncharacteristic of the usual film composer attitude, Legrand was approving. "(Godard) repeated it throughout the whole film. It's a great idea, and it works very, very well." Quoted in Brown, 1994, 189.

didn't hear it."³⁹⁴ As with containers and accidentally synchronized swimmers, classical music is transformed in its film settings, where it can work in wonderful ways.

Indeterminate confusions may frustrate an absolutist musical elite, but it opens up the music and can provide the layman with an accessible and valid point of entry.

Twentieth century aesthetics, in film and around it, are full of investigations into randomness and what it portends.³⁹⁵ In light of these we see that not only Cage's random musics, but music in general, in whatever setting, becomes sensical. "No matter what we do, it ends by being melodic."³⁹⁶

³⁹⁴. Cage, 1959, side 1. Keller provides a salutary alternative view. "In Gone With the Wind...(Max) Steiner drenches the sound track in a rather indiscriminate fashion; in places the music has somewhat less relation to the visual than the band's music at Lyon's Corner House has to your table talk." Keller, 1947-8 (*Sight and Sound*, volume 16, number 64), 169.

³⁹⁵. There are numerous examples. Dada advocated the breaking of all conventional connections. Luis Buñuel discusses the automatic writing that led to Un Chien Andalou, as well as the provocative alternating of "Argentinian tangos with *Tristan und Isolde*" at its Paris premiere. Buñuel, 1983, 104, 106. Surrealist André Breton randomly entered and exited Paris cinemas to enjoy the indeterminate juxtapositions that resulted. Jean Cocteau's "accidental synchronism" showed how effective a cue composed for one sequence could be when used in the "wrong" one. See Brown, 1994, 71-74.

³⁹⁶. Cage, 1959, side 1.

BLANK IN ORIGINAL

CHAPTER SIX

SUMMARY, CONCLUSIONS AND IMPLICATIONS

To end this study I will briefly summarize some of its main points, as well as suggesting some of their broader, extra-cinematic significance.

Justification for Film Music, and for Film-Musical Quotation

Roy Prendergast says that the "problem" with 1940s Hollywood films dealing with concert artists was that they used "what was essentially concert music. In order to bring some of the famous concert works in line with the dramatic needs of the story, great works of musical art had to be severely cut."³⁹⁷ Chapter two's critics had deep reasons for resisting film's free use of the concert repertory. For them cutting and quoting were emblematic of a very serious, quite general malaise. Yet taken to extremes this attitude leads to excessive compartmentalization and mutual exclusivity. Adaptation from one context to another may cause discomfort, and yet it may be this very discomfort that generates new light and insight.

Adaptation is not only related to a specific work; it can also involve a more general phenomenon, or the conditions that gave rise to it. Changes in circumstance, the passage of time, new knowledge and broader perspectives can all call for an adaptation of previously resistant attitudes.

If this is true then prescription and proscription might give way to observation and explication, with conditions not so much condemned or defended, as explained and understood. This shift allows us to adapt our way out of ossified attitudes toward, among other things, musical quotation in film.

Thus we would see that adjunctive, even subservient music has a valid history and a viable place.

Film music takes second place to the story, the cast, the visuals of the medium, but that need not bother us. Bach's music was secondary to the celebration of the Holy Mass, Mozart's to the Court social functions and Rossini's to the splendour of the stage and the singing. Great music can still emerge in competition with other forms of artistic expression; film music can do just this.³⁹⁸

Here are both apology and defiance, but while straining to justify film music, Huntley also finds honourable precedent for extra-musical dependence.

We have seen how the use of classical music in film creates a musicological tension. In most tonal classical music, formal architecture requires the playing of the complete work, as each part is inextricably bound up with the rest.³⁹⁹ Considering this architecture, fragmentation means ruination, and so later film music practice (where musical cuts are taken for granted) is musically ruinous.

But for the political avant garde, not to mention musical archeologists, ruins are also instructive, and a true reflection of some historical/theoretical reality. To confound musicological expectations is potentially a way to uncover apparatuses. To disturb the integrity of a composition is also to upset the security of its exalted status. It is possible that when mystique is removed, knowledge follows, perhaps even another, broader exaltation.

Film music's gleeful disregard for pre-existing texts has understandably caused alarm. But that is not the only possible response. "If you happen to have a scenic

³⁹⁷. Prendergast, 1992, 70.

³⁹⁸. Huntley, 1947, 20.

³⁹⁹. Eisler, 1947, 38-39. Also Irving, 1954. Thus Eisler's advocacy for "new music" in film, because of its comparative brevity and motivic independence. To look at things in a different light, there is a strong suggestion (cf. Shaw, 1981, Russell, 1987), that the playing of the entire work had by no means been the general practice until the late 19th

moving in one atmosphere lasting about 6 minutes and you choose a (musical) selection which only lasts 5 minutes do not hesitate in cutting the weakest parts of your scenic picture to suit the length of the music..."⁴⁰⁰. Rapée's guides were lightning rods of musical opprobrium, but as this quotation points out, his scissors could cut both ways. Perhaps on the one hand he is cavalier, but on the other? Adaptability? Praxis? Music as really experienced?

What has always been required of film composers is flexibility. The same might be enjoined by the film music listener, especially if he or she leans to the music side of the equation. Leslie Perkoff wrote the following in 1937.

Music in its most profound use in the cinema must be in its role as an integral part of the cinematic scheme, in creating atmosphere and in developing emotional content. The success of this depends chiefly on the composer's willingness and initiative to throw overboard many of his orthodox methods of composition in the same way that the novelist-turned-scenarist might have to give up lengthy polemics and descriptive embellishments for the economic tempo of film.⁴⁰¹

Even the *New Grove Dictionary* makes some allowance for a more flexible approach. Christopher Palmer notes that André Previn left Tchaikovsky's music practically unaltered in Ken Russell's The Music Lovers (1970). While this has always been the preferred course, Palmer also refers positively to Dmitri Tiomkin's freely altered and adapted score for the Russian film Tchaikovsky (1971). "(B)ecause of the kinship

century.

⁴⁰⁰. Rapée, 1925, 10.

⁴⁰¹. Quoted in Steiner, 1989, 96.

between (Tiomkin's) own musical language and Tchaikovsky's there is little stylistic disparity, and most of the paraphrases are appropriate for their dramatic contexts."⁴⁰²

Once again, I am not rejecting isolationist musical critiques of film music. But when Hans Keller allows that there is "definite if limited scope for the filming of unfilmic music", he is speaking as a film sympathizer who's allegiance is finally musical.⁴⁰³ For the musicians fidelity, and not collaboration, has been the only admissable treatment.⁴⁰⁴

Thus it is that Keller feels, for instance, that Carol Reed's The Man Between (1953)

misuses an excellent recording...of a Salome...excerpt...for the purpose of prolonging the most vulgar kind of dramatic tension: the spectator is invited, *not to listen to the music*, but to be titillated by this dramatic suspension and to wait impatiently for the dramatic solution.⁴⁰⁵

But the fact is that the spectator does not accept the invitation so that he or she can merely to listen to the music. The spectator comes for the film; even the informed and musically erudite film fan is interested in a cinematic ensemble of elements, and not just the music.

Music critics of a certain period vigorously criticize film music, and for many good reasons. Hans Keller bemoans alienated listening states, their institutional

⁴⁰². Palmer, 1980, 6: 553.

⁴⁰³. Keller, 1953 (M.R., XIV), 311-12. The challenge for Keller, and the cause for the "limited scope" he refers to, as with the second use by Hitchcock of Arthur Benjamin's *Storm Clouds* in the second The Man Who Knew Too Much, is that the music is too good. In the presence of such "the musical person" will stop caring about the film. See Keller, 1956 (M. R., XVII), 154.

⁴⁰⁴. This stand coincides with early notions of literary adaptation in film. Bela Balazs discusses (and then dismisses) the notion that poor novels provided the best film material, as story could be exploited without danger of besmirching a non-existent artfulness. Balazs, 1952, 258-65. See discussion in Andrew, 1976, 87-88.

proliferation and codification, and the distraction and unbeauty that they imply. He fiercely criticizes the bad and just as fiercely defends the worthy individual film composer, stating finally that the music must be defended, and that mere functional use is offensive.⁴⁰⁶

Adorno decried fashion, thieving, rootless eclecticism, and found in these things emblems of 20th century alienation, insincerity, artlessness. Here he was describing Stravinsky's magpie period, condemning an acknowledged genius whose genius made his transgressions all the more egregious.⁴⁰⁷ But Stravinsky's pastiches were at least confined to musical territory. Elsewhere popular music (eg, the Brill Building), and film music too were so hopelessly entangled in the deplorable conditions, and so without the talents and traditions that might have pulled them out, that they were pretty well beyond hope.

Edward Said reaffirms these regressions in modern contexts. Few amateur musicians remain, noise pollution dominates, mechanical reproduction creates a paradoxically obliterating musical ubiquity.⁴⁰⁸ Said discusses the spectacle of the concert hall, and a transformation that has obtained in relation to it. "What competes with (concerts) is not the amateur's experience but other public displays of specialized skill (sports, circus, dance contests) that, at its worst and most vulgar, the concert may attempt to match."⁴⁰⁹

This shift in binaries is precisely what Wilfred Mellers so mourns. The professional/amateur axis becomes one of professional and professional transposed, and the humble, the human, is shut out. For Mellers, for all, modern music has cut out the

⁴⁰⁵. Keller, 1953 (M. R., XIV), 312. Emphasis added.

⁴⁰⁶. See Hoffmann's composer (1819-21, 46) on the difficulty of musical/visual collaboration, on how such collaboration usually results in the hobbling of both music and verse in order to accommodate the opposing element.

⁴⁰⁷. Adorno, 1973, 135-217. Adorno's objection to Stravinsky's borrowings, and to neo-classicism in general was that it was all an impossible, even disingenuous conciliation, a doomed attempt to restore authenticity to an alienated, subjugated form.

⁴⁰⁸. Said, 1991, 96.

amateur, and to pursue the implications etymologically, has eliminated love from the equation.⁴¹⁰

Here is the oxymoron of industrial art making, the "regression to that pre-industrial stage of composition which, in Hollywood, is regarded as the basis of expertise."⁴¹¹

Grantable, and granted. But consider Robin Wood's--note, a *film* critic--insightful description of Stravinsky's *L'Histoire du Soldat*.

Stravinsky uses the tango, the waltz, the march and ragtime, subjecting them to processes of extreme contrapuntal ingenuity and juxtaposing them without any hint of condescension and not at all in the spirit of parody; if he reduces these forms to basic clichés, it is not to mock the clichés but to validate them by investing them with his own intellectual and physical vitality.⁴¹²

Eclecticism need not be rootless, and pastiche, or even parody, can both emerge out of and generate vitality.

In the same way Hollywood composition, or film scoring generally, are not just matters of filming unfilmic music, nor the adaptation/utilization of substandard compositions. In terms of music in film it is transposition that is required; film and music are two different arts, their terminologies and fundamental principles--counterpoint

⁴⁰⁹. Ibid., 11.

⁴¹⁰. Ironically the post-war, pre-sound period in film and film music can be seen as a brief final moment of virtuous amateurism. Although media technologies would soon end the recreational dominance of the parlour piano, there was arguably a brief balance between entertainment that was home made and that which was consumed elsewhere. In that brief period what is usually seen as bad film accompaniment was also evidence of a musical culture where valorized texts were accessible across the social scale. See Sadie, ed., 1988, 63-8. Also cf. Russell, 1987.

⁴¹¹. Keller, 1958, (M. R., XIX), 151.

⁴¹². Cameron, 1967, 88.

analogies notwithstanding--distinct. What applies to music in isolation is not necessarily the case when it occurs in film.

Ernest Newman describes the challenge.

In a symphony or a fugue you have to consider nothing but the nature of absolute music; in the drama, you have to worry about no problems except those that lie in the nature of the drama. But as soon as you begin to work in a form that is a blend of the two, each of them wants to pull the other along its own road, and a compromise has to be arrived at.⁴¹³

For an isolationist the problem is insurmountable. But a little flexibility, at points of production or reception, can provide a solution.

(W)e make allowances; we give up a little purely aesthetic pleasure in consideration of getting a great deal of another kind of pleasure--that of seeing a bigger picture of a more real life put on the canvas. If we can only get the larger human quality...by giving up a little of the aesthetic gratification that comes from perfect form--well, being reasonable creatures, there are times when we will cheerfully accept the situation and make the compromise.⁴¹⁴

Newman's compromise seems easy enough with regard to specific instances of use and response, but its portent is greater than it may at first appear. Increased

⁴¹³. Newman, 1910, 145. See Tovey, 1937, 44-5 (on *Coriolanus* and *Egmont*), 104-06 (on Mendelssohn's incidental music to *A Midsummernight's Dream*) for excellent examples of such compromise, both musical, and in terms of Tovey's own critical response to these works.

⁴¹⁴. Ibid., 146. See Searle, 1985, for Liszt's unfussy willingness to adapt his musical material to the needs of extra-musical sources.

openness to the advantages of medium hybridization imperils hierarchies of film narration and film expression (story above all, with picture and dialogue responsible for clear communication), hierarchies of high and low, and the rigid borders of disciplinary decorum and medium specificity.

Adorno observes that after Beethoven music left the social realm and became completely aesthetic.⁴¹⁵ Thus the defense of Schoenberg and the general tone of disappointment and isolationism.⁴¹⁶ But is that all there is? In response to Adorno we might offer Alan Merriam's oft-cited definition of ethnomusicology as "the study of music in culture."⁴¹⁷ After Adorno's terminal judgments came folk, rock, and for classical music (Stravinsky, and film), a kind of Derridean play. To a degree, when classical music suddenly appears in a film, the bets are off. As Martin Marks suggests, "(t)he primary material of film music, both for the audience and the researcher, is not a recording or a score, but the film itself."⁴¹⁸

Leonard Bernstein points out that "(w)hen...expectations are violated, you've got a variation. The violation is the variation."⁴¹⁹ Variation is essential to music, and if recontextualization in one sense is vulgar, in another it is fundamentally musical, a variation that can be, even should be, invigorating. Music, in ambiguous settings, might just become, poetry. "(A)ll musical transformations lead to metaphorical results."⁴²⁰ Or, if not always poetry--some appropriations *are* vulgar or inept--then certainly sociology, and history, and even humanity.

⁴¹⁵. See Subotnik, 1976, 251-3.

⁴¹⁶. "Art that does not yield (to the cultural industry's flattening of aesthetic autonomy) is completely shut off from consumption and driven into isolation." And again, "(t)he fear expressed in the dissonances of Schoenberg's most radical period far surpasses the measure of fear conceivable to the average middle class individual; it is a historical fear, a sense of impending doom." Eisler, 1947, x, 36.

⁴¹⁷. Merriam, 1964, 6.

⁴¹⁸. Quoted in Wright, H. Stephen, "The materials of film music: their nature and accessibility," in McCarty, ed., 1989, 5.

⁴¹⁹. Bernstein, 1976, 162.

⁴²⁰. Ibid., 153.

This fact has not always been acknowledged in film music discourse. Kurt London calls "(the) strong combination of picture with sound...a revolutionary novelty both in musical theory and in sound technique."⁴²¹ This is simply not true. There is not enough of the broad view in film music criticism, and much of it is plain wrongheaded. Film music uses have ample precedent, and if needed, justification in a great number of contexts.

Multivalent Montage

It is between pure parallelism and strict "counterpoint," between empathy and opposition that we find the great majority of picture/music equations, where we find multiplicity and multivalence. This notion jeopardizes a standard film-music truism: "(i)t is a peculiarity of film music that if it isn't just right, it can be very wrong."⁴²² "Wrong" could still be convincingly argued, but one could well add that the "right" is often wrong too. As I have argued, standard geometries are not sufficiently inclusive.

George Antheil wrote in 1938 about a better awareness and use of both alternatives.

This does not mean that music must only play *with* a picture; it can also play against it; in fact I believe that very often indeed it should play against it. But this 'against' should be a definite and intended contrast, heightening the drama and the effect of the picture instead of merely drawing attention to the queer non-matching music.⁴²³

⁴²¹. London, 1936, 14.

⁴²². Thomas, 1979, 7.

⁴²³. Quoted in Steiner, 1989, 100-01.

Siegfried Kracauer felt similarly, that counterpoint must maintain contact with the narrative, that chaotic relations are pointless.⁴²⁴ But Kracauer also reminisces about a certain drunken pianist in silent days who's accompaniments would wander from the apparent business at hand.

(The) lack of relation between the musical themes and the action they were supposed to sustain seemed very delightful indeed to me, for it made me see the story in a new and unexpected light or, more important, challenged me to lose myself in an uncharted wilderness opened up by allusive shots.⁴²⁵

Kracauer here expresses some very contemporary sounding sentiments, which implicitly suggest how timid our thinking has been. Walter Murch states the case more directly.

In continuing to say that we 'see' a film or a television program, we persist in ignoring how the soundtrack has modified perception. At best, some people are content with an additive model, according to which witnessing an audiovisual spectacle basically consists of seeing images plus hearing sounds.⁴²⁶

Not only can music in film be much more, it usually already is. “(T)he juxtaposition of the musical continuity with the spatial discontinuity of the editing creates

⁴²⁴. Kracauer, 1960, 142.

⁴²⁵. Ibid., 137.

⁴²⁶. Chion, 1994, xxvi.

a kind of extranarrative counterpoint that remains one of the largely untapped possibilities of the cinematic art."⁴²⁷

The terms "multivalent" and "indeterminate" appropriately suggest how tenuous and subjective musical connections and meanings can be. Classical intellectual montage posits oppositions and proclaims equivalencies (strutting peacocks and Alexander Kerensky, strumming balalaikas and noodling Mensheviks), all of which result in social and cinematic syntheses. Alternatively, multivalent montage produces as many questions as answers. Where classical montage takes material fragmentation (the film material itself, as well as the social constructs it is rendering) and unites it in a new way, multivalent montage retains its cubist aspect, the differing and sometimes distorted perspectives characteristic of modernism and of modern life. It suggests possibilities of approaching a text, each of which will bring the viewer to a slightly, or even vastly different place.⁴²⁸

Umberto Eco notes that some works are so packed that they are "open to a continuous generation of internal relations which the consumer must uncover and select in the act of perceiving the totality of incoming stimuli."⁴²⁹ We find in most things not a single pattern, but a bunch of complex relations. As with packed works, so much more with packed traditions; David Bordwell has questioned the use of the musical analogy, but finally finds value in its very partialness, its inadequacy: it is not that it is, but that it is *like*.

Kracauer continues:

⁴²⁷. Brown, 1994, 69-70.

⁴²⁸. For a fine cinematic essay on musical multivalence, see Humphrey Jennings' underrated The True Story of Lili Marlene (1943). Also Richard Roud (1971, 65) on The Chronicle of Anna Magdalena Bach (1968). For an application in a different context, consider Stanislavski's application of the idea of "if" to a role. The actor approaches a character from a number of possible perspectives, which, considered together, greatly expand, enrich and complicate the presentation. Stanislavski, 1936, An Actor Prepares, New York, Routledge, 46-71.

Precisely by disregarding the images on the screen, the old pianist caused them to yield many a secret. Yet his unawareness of their presence did not preclude improbable parallels: once in a while his music conformed to the dramatic events with an accuracy which struck me all the more as miraculous since it was entirely unintended...And these random coincidences, along with the stimulating effects of the normal discrepancies, gave me the impression that there existed after all a relationship, however elusive, between the drunken pianist's soliloquies and the dramas before my eyes--a relationship which I considered perfect because of its accidental nature and its indeterminacy. I never heard a more fitting accompaniment.⁴³⁰

Gino Stefani lists fourteen possible ways for his five semiotic code levels to interact, to be heard. He emphasizes the importance of considering music-analytic, psychological, sociological hearings. In stating that "semiotics of music is the discipline whose object is musical competence as we have defined it,"⁴³¹ he is implying that not meaning, or a way of meaning, but all those things multiplied are the proper objects of the discipline.

As already discussed, Rick Altman has said that "(m)eaning...is never something that words or texts have, but always something that is *made* in a four-party meaning-situation. An *author*...circulates a *text*...to an *audience*...whose perception is partly dependent on the *interpretive community* to which its members belong."⁴³²

Interpretive communities (cf. the musical elitism/insularity that I discussed in chapters one and two) can present a certain homogeneity, an inclination to dominant

⁴²⁹. Quoted in Bordwell, 1980, 153.

⁴³⁰. Kracauer, 1960, 137-8.

⁴³¹. Stefani, 1987, 21.

⁴³². Altman, 1987, 2.

responses. Indeed, this is the source idea of, for instance, the Frankfurt School pessimism that we have also considered. But I contend that communities are not inherently thus, and that it is precisely attention to the cracks and variables enumerated here that reveals the fact. Essentially, the community from which an individual reader comes will not be monolithic, just as that reader can never be an unconflicted, predictably reacting constant.

Altman discusses a first level of language and communication which operates with respect to the generator's intent, along with the many factors and determinants which inflect and deflect it. A second level, where what was formerly characterized as the message goes out to its receivers, increases geometrically.⁴³³

Milton Babbitt maintains that music is the same. Common musical practice (tonality) was just one set of rational choices out of an infinite domain of possibilities. His demanding music explores roads not taken, and draws as much upon mathematics as music, upon the permutations and possibilities of the form. The five points of Gino Stefani's Model of Musical Competence likewise allows for numerous permutations and, given the diversity of potential participants, quite vast and exciting possibility.⁴³⁴ So it is with conventional montage geometries. Bordwell notes that the musical analogy first used in a simple attempt to justify the medium, and then that Eisenstein's concept of the principle became decidedly, and often problematically "roomy".⁴³⁵ He points out the very distinct and ultimately incompatible ways that the analogy has been used.⁴³⁶

These things are all true. Musical analogies are inexact, but much of their power comes from the gaps and spaces; classical music in film explores these same infinities. Its presence and function is analogous to phenomenology, to cubist montage, to the multiple ways that multiple people deal with multiple works.

⁴³³. Ibid., 3.

⁴³⁴. Cf. Stefani, 1987.

⁴³⁵. Bordwell, 1980, 141, 148.

⁴³⁶. Wagnerianly (late Eisenstein) in terms of unity; in early Eisenstein, or Noel Burch, in

The Figurative Implications of *Musical Counterpoint*

One motivation for my revising of the counterpoint analogy is that I feel that much of prevailing film discourse continues to reflect the pre-interpreted juxtapositions of classic intellectual montage, and the insufficiently nuanced oppositions of early montage theory. Range of reference is limited, as are the conclusions drawn. The result is that distortion, a lack of understanding, even of civility are still evident in theoretical discussions and uses of counterpoint.

Mary Ann Doane has stressed the importance of synchronous sound as a means by which classical film staves off (the) threat (of opening up the image to its multiple meanings); in routine production procedure, the editor 'marries' the sound track to the image track in order to domesticate sound's potentially disruptive effects.⁴³⁷

Doane and Flinn use loaded words to (effectively) describe the frequent domestication of sound in film. But by assuming oppressions in marrying and domesticity (not to mention film sound) they are dramatically underestimating the real complexity and possible progressiveness of these contexts.⁴³⁸

Royal Brown makes a similarly valuable point, with similar overemphasis.

opposition.

⁴³⁷. Flinn, 1993, 43.

⁴³⁸. Similarly, Flinn speaks of Ernest Bloch's interest in "mysticism, aesthetics and utopian thought," how Marxists are put off by such elements, how Bloch's relevance is endangered in discourse by the fact that his largest US audience has been among theologians (ibid., 95). It is true that in many ways contemporary theoretical discourse and theology have (unfortunately) not had much to say to each other, but the assumption, which Flinn implicitly follows, that this is as it should be, is unfortunate.

For if, on the one level, the cultural mythification via the merger of the music and visuals into the narrative can blind and deafen the viewer/listener to the existence of the filmic images as such within history while creating a pseudohistory with which the viewer/listener is encouraged to identify, the film/music interaction can...aesthetically create the presence of a broader, noncultural mythology that roundly negates the entire patriarchal belief in a scientific empiricism that holds physical space, chronological/linear time, and history/causality as absolute truths.⁴³⁹

By assuming "entire patriarchal beliefs" Brown is affirming the absolutes he condemns, and in doing so he diminishes his argument. "(A)udiovisual dissonance is merely the inverse of convention, and thus pays homage to it, imprisoning us in a binary logic that has only remotely to do with how cinema works."⁴⁴⁰

Must all be withering parallelism or revolutionary opposition? Staunch advocacy, as well as reading against the grain are extremely important, but both have their dangers. Stuart Hall warns against the pendulum swing from naive assumptions of "necessary correspondence" to the equally totalizing "necessarily no correspondence," reminding us that one isn't any more helpful than the other, even if it is more fashionable.⁴⁴¹ Reading against the grain, with respect to film sound or family relations, should presuppose an awareness of the generating grain, as well as all the unexpected surfaces and depths that we don't see.

My point is that there is much more to film music, and to meaning in general, than simply parallelism and perpendicularity. If the former is congruent, and the latter at

⁴³⁹. Brown, 1994, 34.

⁴⁴⁰. Chion, 1994, 38.

⁴⁴¹. Hall, Stuart, "Signification, representation, ideology: Althusser and the post-structuralist debates," in *Critical Studies in Mass Communication*, Vol. 2, # 2, 94.

a ninety degree angle to that congruent line, then musical counterpoint shifts from concord to opposition and back again, and covers the intervening eighty-nine degrees as well. If we use musical counterpoint as a figure for the way sound and music function in film, we must consider this in-between territory. Meaning in music is multifarious and difficult to pin down. This being the case, simple parallels and oppositions become nearly impossible (and not even particularly desirable).

Parallel and perpendicular, tonal concord and counterpoint have not always been so polar. R.O. Morris speaks of rhythmic independence and tonal fluidity in 16th century harmonic practice. To illustrate he uses the metaphor of several people, each standing for a melodic line, walking abreast; pace and distance may vary, but they are still out together. Wilfrid Mellers summarizes.

Concord is the basis of 16th century harmony, discord is a momentary disturbance before the concord's repose; we can never consider any discord in isolation but only in relation to the context which it appears in, for it is not a self-contained entity but part of the progressive evolution of a number of equally important lines.⁴⁴²

Musical counterpoint does not oppose without coming together. Fugue is the superlatively contrapuntal musical form, in which an idea is followed by a counter-idea, the subject by counter subjects. This terminology is most montage-like, and indeed classic montage principles⁴⁴³ would seem to be inscribed within fugal structure, at least

⁴⁴². In Mellers, 1946, 47-8. See also Brown, 1988, 170. Brown quotes composer Roger Sessions on individualist features in late 19th century musical practice, where dissonant detail takes precedence over lines, or the tonal and structural coherence of the whole. Sessions counters this to earlier dissonances (Bach, Mozart, etc.) which are rationalized within the whole.

⁴⁴³. I.e. "A dialectical approach to film form," "The cinematographic principle and the ideogram," and other such early expressions of enthusiastic prescription. See particularly Eisenstein, 1942, 1949.

as stated here. But there are alternative views.⁴⁴⁴ And counterpoint in its traditional tonal setting is full of consonance. Statements are followed by elaborations, but musical themes are returned to again and again, as without them the structure breaks down. Interestingly the tonal, affirmative parts of counterpoint are part of film, and classical film theory as well. We just do not hear as much about them. Eisenstein, writing well after the Statement, expressed his admiration for the "sound and sight consonance" in Disney's "wonderful" *Snow White*.⁴⁴⁵ In addition to montage opposition, as well as the non-synchronization of sound and image, Eisenstein would later find substantial spaces for concord, and even parallelism.⁴⁴⁶

Given some of Eisenstein's earlier polemical excesses, it seems surprising to hear him praise musical equivalencies. But equivalency and textual unity are not only or always repressive measures, and in fact the unity that informs the present study draws on the almost Blakesian transcendence of later Eisenstein. His many disappointments leaving him not just battered, but extremely philosophical, he seems to come in the end to a surprising and simple conclusion. No matter how far afield one's points of reference, everything is, in the end, connected.

Music, especially contrapuntal music, is not really reducible to simple montage equations. It is not only that excessive correspondence between image and music ignores "undertones of meaning"⁴⁴⁷; the same is true when we excessively assume, in "counterpoint," un-correspondence. "Too often homology spells tautology, and contrast contradiction."⁴⁴⁸

⁴⁴⁴. Claude Levi-Strauss has said that fugue reunites sundered, oppositional elements in myth. Levi-Strauss, 1979, *Myth and meaning*, New York, Schocken Books, 50.

⁴⁴⁵. Eisenstein, 1968, 85.

⁴⁴⁶. See Eisenstein's monumental *Mickey Mousing with Prokofieff* in 1938's *Alexander Nevsky*, in "Form and Content: Practice," in Eisenstein, 1942, 157-216.

⁴⁴⁷. Pudovkin, 1949, 163.

The 20th Century Programme

Edward Said:

the study of music can be more, and not less, interesting if we situate music as taking place, so to speak, in a social and cultural setting.

Another way of putting this is to say that the roles played by music in Western society are extraordinarily varied, and far exceed the antiseptic, cloistered, academic, professional aloofness it seems to have been accorded.⁴⁴⁹

The programme analogy that I have urged is linked to my models of multivalent meaning, and to the idea that greater inclusiveness will illuminate our film/musical experience. In fact, the idea applies to culture and criticism in general; instead of Liszt's "correct interpretation" we have simultaneity and multiplicity, referentiality, recontextualization, recognition.

Classical music in film takes the tonality of the post-Romantic film score--an effaced apparatus within an ideologically repressive apparatus--and disturbs it, jolts and awakens us by bringing the modernisms and post-modernisms of the 20th century in. This happens not in the music itself, but in its context, where it appears, and what we make of that appearance. The result is a kind of movie version of Stravinskian pastiche, which lies in between the dead end of atonality (Schoenberg as defended by Adorno), and the disavowal of a business-as-usual attitude (Hollywood). The possibility is of simultaneous challenge, social engagement and beauty.⁴⁵⁰

Poetic power comes from incongruity, the most pregnant juxtapositions sometimes being the most anomalous ones. Consider Stravinsky's quotation of

⁴⁴⁸. Keller, *Music Review*, vol. xvii, 154.

⁴⁴⁹. Said, 1991, xvi.

Pergolesi in *Pulcinella*, the stringless setting of the Latin text in the *Symphony of Psalms*.⁴⁵¹ Through quotation and recontextualization composers, continents, whole centuries are conflated, contrasted, renewed and refreshed. And if we will, and if we pay attention and explicitly bring the making of meaning into the mix, Max Steiner's retreaded Romanticism, as well as most any quotation, can be as resonant as any of these more valorized forms of neoclassicism.

As we have seen throughout this study, classical quotations tend to outstrip the usual workaday functions of film music, leading to all kinds of unsuspected results. Thus, where in Aaron Copland's statement "(m)usic can be used to underline or create psychological refinements--the unspoken thoughts of a character or the unseen implications of a situation"⁴⁵², classical music fulfils this function by taking individual, individualistic psychology and extending their "unseen implications," contextualizing them socially and historically. As a result quotation does not celebrate unique sensibilities, with the resulting shadows of reaction or misapprehension⁴⁵³, but the possibility of more rational, generalizable applications. High romantic or high modernist impulses are seen in relief, reduced to human dimension, and they often become more powerful as a result.

Michel Chion says that the score communicates with all the times and spaces of a film, covering over gaps and smoothing rough edges.⁴⁵⁴ Classical music in film, instead of communicating solely with the other cinematic elements, brings and binds vast portions of history, as well as the art and thought and life associated with them. The

⁴⁵⁰. Godard's use of the standard repertoire is a rich and varied example.

⁴⁵¹. Keller (1947, *Sight and Sound*, volume 16, number 61, 30-1) gives what is probably his most enthusiastic praise for a piece of film music when reviewing Benjamin Britten's similar updating of an air by Purcell for Muir Mathieson's Crown film, *Instruments of the Orchestra* (1947). As might be said for *Pulcinella*, Britten's combination and conflation of periods and techniques both educates and edifies, providing beauty and even reconciliation.

⁴⁵². In Prendergast, 1994, 216.

⁴⁵³. Cf. Kolker, 1983, 82-89, 163-65.

⁴⁵⁴. Chion, 1994, 81.

difference is that despite the fact, or perhaps because of the way that quotation has been so disturbing, the covering or smoothing is less effective, or may hardly be work at all. And, perhaps paradoxically, the communication is greater as a result.

In summary, a programme analogy applies to the use and understanding of source music in film, and to numerous other cultural subjects as well. Music and text, or music and some extramusical idea or association are always related, directly or by implication; in this sense, all music has always been programmatic. Opera only made this relation explicit, and the programme composers only sought to tie it down. Roger Scruton says that titles in programme music ("*Traumerei/Dreaming*," "Wedding Day at Troldhaugen") only express emotion, rather than evoking a subject. But just as programme was partly devised to better communicate with lay listeners, so it is the listener that makes, that completes the programme. Evocation take place. And each listener's programme is bound to be different.

Eisenstein describes Prokofieff conducting a film cue.

(His) lanky figure hidden to the waist by the sweeping movements of the musician's bows seemed to be swaying in the midst of rippling corn. He leaned over towards the musicians, listening intently to the interplay of the various instruments' motifs. *En passant*, he whispered to me, pointing first to one of the musicians and then to another, commenting: "That one is playing the light flickering across the waves...that one the billowing of the waves...that one the wide expanses of the ocean...and that one the mysteries of the deep..."⁴⁵⁵

Lowbrow literalism? Maybe partly. But like Liszt, or Leonard Bernstein, Eisenstein is aware of one reason for the persistence of programmatic, extrinsic

tendencies. "Like" and "as" may be seen as a harness restricting music's power and freedom, but they are also the first words of poetry, not to mention teaching. And Eisenstein's latter poetics (ie. the stunningly operatic Prokofieff/Eisenstein collaborations, especially the "Ivan" films) remind us how expansive and multivalent "like" and "as" can be. As he says, "(music) is never merely illustrative."⁴⁵⁶

We have seen that programme music is largely unappreciated because of the feeling that "(t)he natural architecture of music was not that of poetry."⁴⁵⁷ But that claim does not hold when we take poetry to be receptive (writerly), and allow that context (history, ideology, intention, reception) can be an architectural element. It is the foundation upon which music's poetic elaborations rest.

Gino Stefani suggests that "'musical genres' give us evidence of social practices in music."⁴⁵⁸ Programme music, and classical music in film, give this evidence in superlative fashion. Considering the same issues central to programme and quotation debates, Stefani discusses high competence and popular competence in relation to musical understanding. He maintains that both are an essential part of the mix. Notwithstanding a nagging rift between musicological and sociological disciplines, should they not combine, to mutual advantage? While being aware of historical separations (as with 19th century views about intrinsic and extrinsic meaning in music), high can relate to low (the work of Wilfred Mellers, and Leonard Meyer, Joseph Kerman), and cultural studies can approach and even inform erudite musicology.

Here is a programme, a context for positive interdisciplinary exchange, for which film music is an ideal site. And classical music, that most directly appropriated from one discipline to the other, is especially apt.

⁴⁵⁵. Eisenstein, "PRKV (on Prokofieff)", in Limbacher, 1974, 161.

⁴⁵⁶. Ibid.

⁴⁵⁷. In Sadie ed., 1980, 18: 432.

⁴⁵⁸. Stefani, 1987, 12.

BLANK IN ORIGINAL

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Abraham, Gerald

1985, "Robert Schumann," in The New Grove early romantic masters I, ed., Stanley Sadie, London, MacMillan

Adorno, Theodor

1972, (with Max Horkheimer), "The culture industry: enlightenment as mass deception", in Dialectic of Enlightenment, trans. John Cumming, New York, Herder and Herder

1973, The philosophy of modern music, New York, Seabury Press

1991, The culture industry: selected essays on mass culture, ed. J.M. Bernstein, London, Routledge

Ali, Omer

1995, "Music to just die for," Sunday Times Scotland, 2-3, June 25

Altman, Rick

1987, The American film musical, Bloomington, Indiana University Press

Anderson, Gillian

1988, Music for silent films: 1894-1929, Washington, Library of Congress

Andrew, Dudley

1976, The major film theories, London, Oxford University Press

1978, "The neglected tradition of phenomenology in film theory," reprinted Bill Nichols, ed., 1985, Movies and Methods, Vol. II, Berkeley, University of California

1984, Concepts in film theory, New York, Oxford University Press

Apel, Willi, ed.

1972, The Harvard dictionary of music, 2nd edition, Cambridge, Harvard University Press

Atkins, Irene Kahn

1983, Source music in motion pictures, London and Toronto, Associated University Presses

Balazs, Béla

1952, Theory of the film: character and growth of a new art, trans. Edith Bone, New York, Dover Publications

- Baring-Gould, Sabine, ed.
1895-6, English minstrelsie: a national monument of English song, 8 vols.,
Edinburgh, TC and EC Jack, Grange Publishing Works
- Barthes, Roland
1974, S/Z, New York, Noonday Press
- Bazelon, Irwin
1975, Knowing the score: notes on film music, New York, Van Nostrand
- Behlmer, Rudy
1989, "'Tumult, battle and blaze': looking back on the 1920s--and since--with
Gaylord Carter, the dean of theatre organists," in McCarty, ed., 1989, 19-59
- Berg, Charles Merrell
1976, An Investigation of the motives for and realization of music to accompany
the american silent film, 1896-1927, New York, Arno Press
- Bergman, Ingmar
1988, The magic lantern, New York, Penguin
- Bernstein, Elmer
1972, "Whatever happened to great movie music?", in *High Fidelity*, July, 1972,
55-58
- Bernstein, Leonard
1976, The Unanswered question: six talks at Harvard, Cambridge, Mass. and
London, Harvard University Press
- Blom, Eric, ed.
1954, Grove's dictionary of music and musicians, 5th ed., London, Macmillan,
1954
- Bordwell, David
1980, "The musical analogy," in *Yale French Studies*, Number 60, 141-156
1989, Making meaning, Cambridge, Mass., Harvard University Press
- Brecht, Bertolt
1964, "The modern theatre is the epic theatre," in Brecht on theatre, trans. John
Willett, Methuen, London, 33-42
1976, Collected plays, vol. II, ed. Ralph Manheim and John Willett, New York,
Vintage
- Brown, Royal
1988, "Film and classical music," in Film and the arts in symbiosis: a resource
guide, Edgerton, Gary, ed., New York, Greenwood Press

- 1994, Overtones and undertones: reading film music, Berkeley, Los Angeles, London, University of California Press
- Buckley, P. Kevin
- 1923, The Orchestral and cinema organist, London, Hawkes and Son
- Buñuel, Luis
- 1983, My last sigh, New York, Vintage
- Burch, Noel
- 1990, Life to those shadows, Berkeley and Los Angeles, University of California
- Burger, Peter
- 1984, Theory of the avant-garde, Minneapolis, University of Minnesota Press
- Busch, Eberhard
- 1976, Karl Barth: His life from letters and autobiographical texts, trans. John Bowden, London, SCM Press
- Bush, Richard H.
- 1989, "The music of Flash Gordon and Buck Rogers," in McCarty, ed., 1989, 143-165
- Cage, John,
- 1959, Indeterminacy: new aspects of form in instrumental and electronic music, Folkways, FT3704
- 1961, Silence: lectures and writings, Middletown, Conn., Wesleyan University Press
- Calder-Marshall, Arthur
- 1937, The Changing scene, London, Chapman and Hall
- Cameron, Ian, ed.
- 1967, The Films of Jean-Luc Godard, London, Studio Vista
- Chanan, Michael
- 1995, Repeated takes: a short history of recording and its effects on music, London, New York, Verso
- Chion, Michel
- 1994, Audio-Vision: sound on film, trans. Claudia Gorbman, New York, Columbia University Press
- Christie, Ian
- 1985, Arrows of desire: the films of Michael Powell and Emeric Pressburger, London, Waterstone
- Cooke, Deryck
- 1959, The language of music, London, New York, Oxford University Press

Craig, Robert

undated, Glasgow Choral Union, 1843-1967: a complete catalogue of choral music performed and names of artists, 20 vol., unpublished manuscript, Mitchell Library, Glasgow, Scotland, donation #30942

Dahlhaus, Carl

1989, Nineteenth-century music, Berkeley, University of California Press

Davie, CT

sheet music archive, Mitchell Library, Glasgow, Scotland

Deutch, Adolph

1944, "Collaboration between the screen writer and composer," in Gustave Arlt ed., Writers congress, Berkeley, University of California

Duckles, Vincent H. and Reed, Ida, 1988, Music reference and research materials: an annotated bibliography, New York, Schirmer.

Dyer, Richard

1993, Brief Encounter, London, BFI

Edgerton, Gary,

1988, "Introduction," in Film and the arts in symbiosis: a resource guide, Edgerton, Gary, ed., New York, Greenwood Press

Eisenstein, Sergei

1942, Film sense, ed. and trans. Jay Leyda, New York, Harcourt Brace

1949, Film form, ed. and trans. Jay Leyda, New York, Harcourt Brace

1968, Film essays and a lecture, ed. and trans. Jay Leyda, Dobson Books

1983, Immoral memories, trans. Herbert Marshall, Boston, Houghton Mifflin

Eisler, Hanns

1947, Composing for the films, London, Dennis Dobson

Elvers, Rudolf, ed.

1986, Felix Mendelssohn: a life in letters, trans. Craig Tomlinson, London, Cassell

Ervine, St. John

1934, The Alleged art of the cinema, London, The Union Society

Faulkner, Robert R.

1971, Hollywood studio musicians: their work and careers in the recording industry, Chicago and New York, Aldine/Atherton

Flinn, Caryl

1993, Strains of utopia: gender, nostalgia and Hollywood film music, Princeton, N.J., Princeton University Press

Foort, Reginald

1932, The Cinema organ, London, Sir Isaac Pitman and Sons

George, W. Tyacke

1912, Playing to pictures: a guide for pianists and conductors of motion picture theatres, London, ET Heron

1914, "Picture Theatre Music during 1913," in Kinematograph Year Book, 1914, London, ET Heron and Co

Godard, Jean-Luc

1972, Godard on Godard, New York and London, Da Capo Press

Goepp, Philip H.

1897, 1902, 1913, Symphonies and their meaning, 3 volumes, Philadelphia and London, J.B. Lippincott

Gorbman, Claudia

1987, Unheard melodies: narrative film music, Bloomington and Minneapolis, Indiana University Press

Hardy, Forsythe

1990, Scotland on screen, Edinburgh, Edinburgh University Press

Hegel, G.W.F.

1920, "Music," from The philosophy of fine art, vol. III, trans. F.P.B. Osmaston, G. Bell and Sons, London

1979, On the arts, abridged and translated by Henry Paolucci, Frederick Ungar, New York

Hoffmann, E.T.A.

1813, "Beethoven's instrumental music,"

1819-21, "The poet and the composer, both in Source readings in music history, vol. V, "The romantic era," Oliver Strunk, ed., New York, WW Norton

Huntley, John

1947, British film music, reprint 1972, New York, Arno Press and the New York Times

Husserl, Edmund

1962, Ideas, trans. W.R. Boyce Gibson, New York

International Music Centre

1962, Films for music education and opera films: an international selective catalogue, Paris, UNESCO

Irving, Ernest

1954, "History," in "Film music" article, Grove's dictionary of music and musicians, 5th edition, 3: 93-98

James, Dennis

1989, "Performing with silent films," in McCarty, ed., 1989, 61-79

Jaubert, Maurice

1937, "Music on the screen," in Footnotes to the film, ed., Charles Davey, London, Oxford

Jennings, Mary-Lou, ed.

1982, Humphrey Jennings: filmmaker, painter, poet, London, BFI

Kalinak, Kathryn

1992, Settling the score: music and the classical hollywood film, Madison, University of Wisconsin Press

Kaplan, Sol

1944, "The Obligations of music," in Gustave Arlt, ed., Writers congress, Berkeley, U of California

Karlin, Fred

1990, On the track: a guide to contemporary film scoring, New York, Schirmer

Keller, Hans

1946-7, in *Sight and sound*, vol. 15, number 60, vol. 16, numbers 61-64

1949, "Film music--the question of quotation," in *Music Survey*, volume II, number 1, 25-7.

1947-1959, in *Music Review*, volumes VIII-XX (1947-1959), ed. Geoffrey Sharp, Cambridge, W. Heffer & Sons

1954, "British music: perspective," in "Film music," Grove's dictionary of music and musicians, 5th edition, 3: 98-103

Kerman, Joseph

1985, Contemplating music: challenges to musicology, Cambridge, Harvard University Press

King, Norman

1984, "The sound of silents," reprinted in Richard Abel, ed., 1996, Silent film, New Brunswick, NJ, Rutgers University Press 31-44.

Kolker, Robert Philip

1983, The altering eye: contemporary international cinema, Oxford, Oxford University Press

Kracauer, Siegfried

1960, Theory of film: the redemption of physical reality, London, Oxford

Kubik, Gail

1944, "Music in the documentary film," in Gustave Arlt, ed., Writers congress, Berkeley, U of California

Lang, Edith, and West, George

1920, Musical accompaniment of motion pictures: a practical manual for pianists and organists, Boston, Boston Music Co

Larson, Randall

1985, Musique fantastique: a survey of music in the fantastic cinema, Metuchen, N.J., Scarecrow

Leroux, Gaston

1986, The Phantom of the opera, London, Virgin

Levant, Oscar

1940, A smattering of ignorance, New York, Doubleday, Doran & co., inc.

Leyda, Jay

1960, Kino: a history of the Russian and Soviet film, Princeton, Princeton University Press

Limbacher, James, ed.

Film music: from violins to video, 1974, Metuchen, NJ, Scarecrow

Lindsay, Vachel

1916, "The orchestra, conversation, and the censorship," in The art of the moving picture, New York, Macmillan, 217-234

Liszt, Franz

1855, "From Berlioz and his 'harold' symphony," in Source readings in music history, vol. V, "The romantic era," edited by Oliver Strunk, ed., New York, WW Norton

London, Kurt

1936, Film music, Translated by Eric S. Bensinger, London, Faber and Faber

MacDonald, Hugh, "Idée Fixe," in New grove dictionary of music and musicians, 9: 18

MacDonald, Kevin

1994, Emeric Pressburger: the life and death of a screenwriter, London, Faber and Faber

Manson, Eddy Lawrence

1989, "The film composer in concert and the concert composer in film," in McCarty, ed., 255-70

McCarty, Clifford, ed.

1989, Film music I, NY and London, Garland Publishing

McGinn, Rob't E.

1979, "Stokowski and bell laboratories: collaboration in the development of high fidelity sound, 1930-1940," unpublished paper presented at the annual meeting of the History of Science Society, New York City, Dec. 29, 1979

Mellers, Wilfrid

1946, Music and society: England and the European tradition, London, Dennis Dobson

1954, "The musical problem," in "Film music," Grove's dictionary of music and musicians, 5th edition, 3: 103- 109

Merriam, Alan

1964, The anthropology of music, Evanston, Northwestern University Press

Meyer, Leonard

1956, Emotion and meaning in music, Chicago, University of Chicago Press

Monelle, Raymond

1992, Linguistics and semiotics in music, Reading, Harwood Academic Publishers

Nattiez, Jean-Jacques

1990, Music and discourse: toward a semiology of music, trans. Carolyn Abbate, Princeton, Princeton University Press

Newcombe, Anthony

1984, "Once more 'between Absolute and Program music': Schumann's second symphony," in *19th Century Music*, VII/3, 233-250

Newman, Ernest

1910, "Programme music," from Musical studies, London, John Lane, The Bodley Head

Oxford English Dictionary. 1961, London, VI, 782-84

Palmer, Christopher

1980, "Film music," in Sadie, ed., 1980, 549-53

Pelikan, Jaroslav

1986, Bach among the theologians, Philadelphia, Fortress Press

Powell, Michael

1986, A Life in movies: an autobiography, London, Heinemann

- Prendergast, Roy M.
1992, Film music: a neglected art, a critical study of music in films, 2nd ed., New York and London, WW Norton and Co
- Previn, André
1991, No minor chords: my days in Hollywood, New York, Doubleday
- Pudovkin, Vsevolod
1949, Film technique and film acting, trans. Ivor Montagu, New York, Lear Publishers
- Pulling, Christopher
1952, They were singing, and what they sang about, London, George G. Harrap and Co
- Raksin, David
1944, "Humor in music," in in Gustave Arlt, ed., Writers Congress, Berkeley, U of California
1989, "Holding a nineteenth century pedal at Twentieth-Century Fox," in McCarty, ed., 1989, 167-181
- Randel, Don, ed.
1986, The new Harvard dictionary of music, Cambridge, Harvard University Press
- Rapée, Erno
1924, Motion picture moods for pianists and organists (adapted to 52 moods and situations), New York, Schirmer
1925, Encyclopedia of music for pictures, New York, Arno Press
- Rosen, Charles and Zerner, Henri
1984, Romanticism and realism: the mythology of nineteenth century art, New York, Viking Press
- Rosin, Philip
1980, "Adorno and film music," in *Yale French Studies*, Number 60, pp. 157-182
- Roud, Richard,
1967, Jean-Luc Godard, London, Thames and Hudson, BFI
1971, Jean-Marie Straub, London, BFI
- Russell, Dave
1987, Popular music in England, 1840-1914: a social history, Manchester University Press, Manchester

- Sabaneev, Leonid
 1935, Music for the films: a handbook for composers and conductors, translated
 SW Pring, London, Pitman and Sons
- Sadie, Stanley, ed.
 1980, New Grove dictionary of music and musicians, 6th ed., London,
 MacMillan
 1985, The New Grove early romantic masters I, London, MacMillan
 1988, The New Grove piano, New York, W.W. Norton
- Said, Edward
 1991, Musical elaborations, New York, Columbia University Press
- Schnitzer, Luda and Jean and Martin, Marcel
 1973, Cinema in revolution: the heroic era of the Soviet film, New York, Hill and
 Wang
- Scruton, Roger
 1980, "Programme music," in Sadie ed. New Grove Dictionary of music and
 musicians, 6th edition, 15: 283-6
- Searle, Humphrey
 1985, "Franz Liszt," in The New Grove early romantic masters I, ed., Stanley
 Sadie, London, MacMillan
- Shavin, Norman
 1954, "Them days is gone forever," in *Music Journal*, vol. 12, #3, pp. 13, 74-5
- Shaw, George Bernard
 1981, Shaw's music, 3 vols., ed. Dan H. Laurence, London, Sydney, Toronto,
 Max Reinhardt, The Bodley Head
- Siegmeister, Elie
 1938, Music and society, New York, Critics Group Press
- Silverman, Kaja
 1983, The subject of semiotics, New York, Oxford University Press
- Sobchack, Vivian
 1992, The address of the eye: a phenomenology of film experience, Princeton,
 Princeton University Press
- Staiger, Janet
 1992, Interpreting films: studies in the historical reception of American cinema,
 Princeton, Princeton University Press
- Stefani, Gino
 1987, "A theory of musical competence," in *Semiotica*, Vol 66-1/3, 7-22

Steiner, Fred

1989, "What were musicians saying about movie music during the first decades of sound? A symposium of selected writings," in McCarty, ed., 1989, 81-107

Steiner, Max

ca. 1964, Notes to you, unpublished manuscript, Steiner collection, Arts and communications special collections, Harold B. Lee library, Brigham Young University

Sternfeld, Frederick W.

1960, "Music and cinema," in Myers, Rollo H., ed., Twentieth Century Music, London, Calder and Boyars

Stokowski, Leopold

1943, "Music and motion pictures," in Music for all of us, New York, Simon and Schuster

Stothart, Herbert

1938, "Film music," in Watts, Stephen, ed., 1938, Behind the screen: how films are made, London, Arthur Barker Ltd.

Stratton, Stephen S.

1901, Mendelssohn, London, J.M. Dent

Subotnik, Rose

1976, "Adorno's diagnosis of Beethoven's late style: early symptoms of fatal condition," in *Journal of American Musicological Society*, 29 (Summer 1976): 251-3.

Taylor, Deems

1940, Walt Disney's Fantasia, New York, Simon and Schuster

Taylor, Richard and Christie, Ian, ed.

1988, The film factory: Russian and Soviet cinema in documents 1896-1939, London, Routledge & Kegan Paul

Temperley, Nicholas

1985, "Fryderyk Chopin," The New Grove early romantic masters I, ed., Stanley Sadie, London, MacMillan

Thomas, Tony

1973, Music for the movies, S. Brunswick and New York, A.S. Barnes

1979, Film score: the view from the podium, as editor, S. Brunswick and New York, A.S. Barnes

Thompson, Kristin

1980, "Early sound counterpoint," in *Yale French Studies*, Number 60, 115-140

- Thomson, Virgil
1966, An autobiography, New York, Dutton
- Tovey, Donald
1937, Essays in musical analysis, 6 volumes, London, Oxford University Press
- Turner, Michael, and Miall, Antony
1972, The parlour song book, a casquet of vocal gems, London, Michael Joseph
1982, The Edwardian song book: drawing room ballads, 1900-1919, London, Methuen
- Wajda, Andrzej
1989, Double vision: my life in film, translated by Rose Medina, London, Faber and Faber
- Ware, John
1940, The lion has wings, London, Collins
- Warrack, John "Leitmotif," in New Grove dictionary of music and musicians, 10: 644-6
- Whitworth, Reginald
1932, The cinema and the theatre organ, London, Musical Opinion
- Wenders, Wim
1989, Emotion pictures: reflections on the cinema, London, Faber and Faber
1991, The logic of images: essays and conversations, trans. Michael Hofmann, London, Faber and Faber
- Willeman, Paul, ed.
1977, Pier Paolo Pasolini, London, BFI
- Williams, R. Vaughan and Lloyd, AC
1934, National music, London, New York, Oxford University Press
1959, Penguin book of English folk songs, London, Penguin
- Wollen, Peter
1982, "The two avant gardes," in Readings and writings: semiotic counter-strategies, London, Verso
- Wright, H. Stephen
1989, "The materials of film music: their nature and accessibility," in McCarty, ed., 1989, 3-17
- Van Houten, Theodore
1992, Silent cinema music in the Netherlands, Buren, Frits Knuf Publishers
- Zador, Leslie T. and Rose, Gregory
1989, "A conversation with Bernard Hermann," in McCarty, ed., 1989, 209-253